CHRYSAL:

OR, THE

ADVENTURES

OF A

GUINEA.

Wherein are exhibited

VIEWS OF SEVERAL STRIKING SCENES,

WITH

Curious and intereſting ANECDOTES of the moſt Noted Perſons in every Rank of Life, whoſe Hands it paſſed through,

IN

AMERICA, ENGLAND, HOLLAND, GERMANY, and PORTUGAL.

——Hold the Mirror up to Nature,
To ſhew Vice its own Image, Virtue his own Likeneſs,
And the very Age and Body of the Times
His Form and Preſſure. SHAKESPEAR.

Qui capit ille facit.

By an ADEPT.

VOL. III.

LONDON:
Printed for T. CAVELL, Bookſeller in the Strand.
MDCCXCI.

15
72
MAR

CONTENTS.

VOL. III.

BOOK the FIRST.

CHAP. I.

Introduction. *Chryſal* enters into a new ſervice. His maſter finds an ingenious excuſe for returning home; but is unexpectedly ſtopt ſhort by the way. In the common courſe of buſineſs *Chryſal* changes his ſervice: Character of his new maſter. Page 13

CHAP. II.

Motives of the enterprize in which *Chryſal's* maſter was engaged. In a private conference between him and his agent, ſome curious ſecrets, in a buſineſs not generally underſtood, are laid open, and a ſeeming contradiction naturally reconciled. 18

CHAP. III.

The behaviour of *Chryſal's* maſter on hearing an intereſting piece of news, with his conciſe method of conducting an enterprize. *Chryſal* changes his ſervice for that of a perſon of a very different character. An eloquent ſpeech produces the uſual effects of eloquence. 23

CHAP. IV.

A characteriſtic conference between *Chryſal's* new maſter, and his friend the general. Remarks on war; with the cauſes and conſequences of ſeveral celebrated victories. A motive not commonly attended to, for courage in ſoldiers and ſubaltern officers, accounts politically for ſome apparent wrongs which they ſuffer. 27

CONTENTS.

CHAP. V.

An officer deſires to ſpeak with the general, the mention of whom introduces a remarkable inſtance of ignorance of the world. Anecdotes of the officer; with the bad conſequences of a ſubaltern's attempting to diſtinguiſh himſelf in the army. 30

CHAP. VI.

Continued. The officer acquits himſelf of the imputation of ingratitude by a piece of fooliſh generoſity. He perſuades the ſoldier, who had ſaved his life, to quit the army, for an uncommon reaſon. The conſequences of ſuch conduct, with an hint of the beſt qualifications for riſing in the army. 33

CHAP. VII.

Chryſal's maſter draws ſome intereſting compariſons between the land and ſea ſervices, which account for the different ſucceſs in them. The officer is admitted, and put under arreſt for preſuming to do more than his duty. 37

CHAP. VIII.

The affair is made up by *Chryſal's* maſter, on the general's making an apology to the officer, and accounting candidly for what he had done. The officer quits the army, leaving an intereſting piece of inſtruction behind him. ----Some ſhort but ſtriking ſketches of the progreſs of the enterprize. 42

CHAP. IX.

Chryſal's attention is agreeably diverted by the appearance of a young *Spaniard*, who throws himſelf at the feet of his maſter to prefer an extraordinary requeſt. The Hiſtory of *Don Alphonſo Guzman*, the young *Spaniard*. 45

CHAP. X.

Continued. *Olivia's* father is taken up by the inquiſition, and herſelf put into a convent, on an *Engliſh* battery's firing, upon which, *Don Alphonſo* comes in deſpair to *Chryſal's*

Chryſal's maſter to make a very odd requeſt, which he grants at length, and alſo promiſes him aſſiſtance to obtain his miſtreſs. 51

CHAP. XI.

The fortunate effect of *Chryſal's* maſter ſparing the convent. The mutual advantages to victors and vanquiſhed of articles of capitulation. The only buſineſs of a general. *Chryſal's* maſter performs his promiſe to *Alphonſo*, into whoſe ſervice *Chryſal* enters. *Alphonſo* recovers his miſtreſs, whoſe father is ſet at liberty by a piece of *fun* of ſome *Engliſh* ſailors. Concluſion of the ſtory of *Alphonſo*. *Chryſal* changes his ſervice. 57

CHAP. XII.

Chryſal makes ſome ſtriking remarks on a ſtate of abſolute liberty. Diſappointment of the hopes of the conquerors, with the natural conſequences, *Chryſal's* maſter going to take a taſte of the pleaſures of affluence, is flammed out of his treaſure by a ſutler, into whoſe ſervice *Chryſal* enters. 64

CHAP. XIII.

Character of *Chryſal's* new maſter. The right way not to ſuffer by making miſtakes. A curious converſation between *Chryſal's* maſter and two perſons of conſequence lays open the ſecrets of ſome intereſting affairs. He makes up a fooliſh diſpute by a ſenſible toaſt. 68

CHAP. XIV.

Continued. The myſteries of agency; and convenience of a military government, with ſome curious notions of the genteeleſt ways of riſing in life. 72

CHAP. XV.

Affecting conſequences of carrying the foregoing ſcheme into execution; with the concluſion of the character and hiſtory of *Chryſal's* maſter. *Chryſal* changes his ſervice. 78

CONTENTS.

CHAP. XVI.

Chryſal's maſter ſwallows a pill, and pleads an important cauſe without ſucceſs. A curious method of parrying one falſe oath by another, with the firſt oath taken by the maſter of a merchant-man. He ſhews another inſtance of his ſkill in ſteering clear of perjury, but without his former ſucceſs. His notion of conſcience. *Chryſal* changes his ſervice. 82

CHAP. XVII.

Chryſal makes ſome reflections on the policy of impoſing oaths of exculpation. The proper method of preſerving the validity of oaths, with the conſequences of their being adminiſtered indiſcriminately to all perſons, and on all occaſions. An uncommon lecture from a captain of a man of war to his officers, repreſents ſome polite amuſements in an odd light. 89

CHAP. XVIII.

The folly of a perſon's proſtituting his character to pleaſe his company, aggravated by the dangerous miſtakes of ridicule for applauſe. *Chryſal's* maſter changes place with the chaplain, and preaches him an intereſting ſermon, in which, among remarks more juſt than polite, he gives an uncommon reaſon for the particular deformity of vice in women. 94

CHAP. XIX.

Chryſal deſcribes true compaſſion; and ſhews the general conſequences of a man's acknowledging diſtreſs, with the reaſons of it. *Chryſal's* maſter is prevailed upon by his captain to tell him the cauſe of his melancholy, which is removed by an act of uncommon generoſity. *Chryſal* enters into a new ſervice. 98

CHAP. XX.

Hiſtory of a lieutenant of a man of war. A compariſon between the rewards of merit, in the land and ſea ſervices; with a remarkable inſtance of a great man's remembering

membering an old friend. The conſequence of attempting to ſet up for a mender of manners, and of a man's not meeting an opportunity of making himſelf remarkable. 105

CHAP. XXI.

An uncommon method of carrying on a war; with the danger of ſpeaking the truth too plainly, at an improper time. *Chryſal's* maſter meets his brother. Some account of him. He repreſents certain matters in an odd light. *Chryſal* enters into his ſervice. Concluſion of his character. *Chryſal* quits his ſervice on an uncommon occaſion, for one, from which he paſſes in the uſual courſe of buſineſs into that of the general. 109.

BOOK the SECOND.

CHAP. I.

Chryſal's maſter makes ſome characteriſtic reflections. He is ſurprized at the officer's refuſing to make up matters; and gives a particular reaſon for ſome peoples riſing in the world. An extraordinary perſonage enters to him. Deſcription of him. He gives a character of the native *Americans;* and offers ſome intereſting remarks on the return they make to the treatment they meet with; and on the practice of forming in the cloſet, plans of operations for armies in the field. Odd reaſon why the *Americans* are deſirous of gold. *Chryſal* changes his ſervice. 115

CHAP. II.

The manner in which *Chryſal's* maſter was received by his ſubjects. Antiquated principles on which his authority was founded. His odd opinions and conduct in ſome important matters, with the conſequences. 124

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

Chryſal deſcribes his maſter's habitation and family. He makes an uncommon progreſs. The manner in which he found the females of his houſehold engaged. Remarks on *finery*. Account of their amuſements, with the manner in which they uſually ended. The method by which *Chryſal's* maſter kept peace in his family. 127

CHAP. IV.

Chryſal's maſter is honourably rewarded for his ſervices. An unexpected meeting with one of his countrywomen, introduces an uncommon remark on a common matter. The lady gives an odd inſtance of conjugal love; and refuſes the civil offer of *Chryſal's* maſter, for a natural reaſon. *Chryſal* changes his ſervice. 132

CHAP. V.

Chryſal's miſtreſs gives ſome ſtriking inſtances of female conſiſtency. She is cured of her grief, by a perſon of accompliſhments as extraordinary as her own. The advantage of comparative excellence. *Chryſal's* miſtreſs marries, and he changes his ſervice for that of an old maſter. 138

CHAP. VI.

Chryſal arrives in *England*. His maſter is ſaluted by a ſight not very pleaſing. The hiſtory of the unfortunate hero of the day opens ſome myſterious ſcenes. *The obvious uſe of councils of war*. 141

CHAP. VII.

Continued. Conſequence of the foregoing conduct. An extraordinary ſentence attempted to be reverſed in an extraordinary manner, and by as extraordinary perſons. The reaſon of this; and why it miſcarried. More myſteries. Juſt fate of the *bunglers*, who left their poor *tool* in the church; with the conſequences of this affair to a certain corps. 145

CHAP.

CONTENTS.

CHAP. VIII.

Chryſal changes his ſervice. He gets a view of a court of *civil judicature*, on an extraordinary occaſion. Some reflections out of the common cant on the delays of the law. A whimſical application of an old ſtory produces the ſtrange effect of putting a counſellor out of countenance. The neceſſity of abſolute power in ſome government; with a common deciſion, by which nothing is decided. 152

CHAP. IX.

Chryſal's maſter joins a remarkable ſet of company. Their characters. Chryſal changes his ſervice. Account of the enterprize on which his late maſter's companions were going; with the convincing arguments they uſed to procure obedience to their commands. 156

CHAP. X.

The ruinous appearance of the ſcene of action ſupplies matter for mirth to thoſe whoſe trade it is to laugh at every thing. The point carried againſt law and reaſon. Enquiry into the cauſe of this. The riſe of the prejudice againſt the profeſſion of an actor. 160

CHAP. XI.

Continued. The common conſequence of exceſs of zeal. The profeſſed intent of theatrical repreſentations defeated by this abſurd prejudice againſt actors. The vices againſt which this prejudice is levelled, in reality the effects of it; with the means for remedying this, and other abuſes. 163

CHAP. XII.

The ſyſtem of policy by which Chryſal's maſter governed his ſtate. Account of his methods of parrying poets. The reaſon why ſo few new plays are acted. Enquiry into the preſent ſtate of genius. The general motives for writing plays preclude them from ſucceſs. Managers and

and poets equally in fault in their dealings with each other. 166

CHAP. XIII.

Chryſal's maſter ſits in judgment on ſome pieces offered to him. A poet of faſhion enters. The arguments by which he ſupports his work againſt the objections of Chryſal's maſter, who makes ſome curious dramatical ſtrictures. The poet driven from his laſt retreat, the intereſt of his great friends, by the common cant of the houſe being *full* for the ſeaſon, departs in a rage, denouncing their reſentment; which Chryſal's maſter ſhews his reaſon not to fear the leaſt effects of. 170

CHAP. XIV.

Continuation. Chryſal's maſter rejects the work of a poet for his ignorance of the laws of the drama. More dramatical ſtrictures. The poet modeſtly inſiſts that his play is refuſed only becauſe it wants the intereſt of the great; and goes off in an huff. Another poet repulſed for his attachment to the laws of the drama. Arguments againſt theſe laws. The poet refuſes to conform to the preſent taſte; and makes an appeal. One more poet refuſed only for wanting every poetical talent. Remarks on ſomething that affects more than care to own it. Chryſal changes his ſervice, on an occaſion not common. 174

CHAP. XV.

Chryſal's maſter engages in a genteel amour. A delicate way of refining pleaſure. His miſtreſs perſuades him that ſhe has poiſoned him, and herſelf. His ſituation on hearing this. Striking proofs of medical ſkill, with the advantage of a regular courſe of practice. An exemplary inſtance of charity and forgiveneſs diverts the doctor's attention to the murdereſs. 180

CHAP. XVI.

The recovery of the murdereſs opens a new ſcene. She clears up the myſtery, leſs to the ſatisfaction of the doctors

tor, than of their noble patient, who rewards her liberally for her good news; and ſends them off without their errand. Reflections on ſome genteel matters. Chryſal changes his ſervice. 184

CHAP. XVII.

Chryſal's maſter goes to be admitted into an extraordinary ſociety. Some reflections not ſuited to the taſte of the times. Riſe of this ſociety. A deſcription of a monaſtery, with an account of its members, and of ſome of its rules. 189

CHAP. XVIII.

Chryſal's maſter arrives at the monaſtery. The manner of his being admitted into the ſociety. Character of his competitor. The method he took to revenge the ſociety's injuſtice in preferring Chryſal's maſter to him. The mirth of the company diſturbed by the entrance of *the devil*, juſt as he was invoked by Chryſal's maſter. The effect of ſuch a viſitor upon the company. The *devil* fixes upon Chryſal's maſter in particular, and makes him ſqueak. 193

CHAP. XIX.

The *Devil* is degraded to a *Baboon*, and his appearance well accounted for, which reſtores the mirth and courage of the company, and particularly of Chryſal's maſter, who exerts himſelf to recover his character. The appearance of the be-deviled *Baboon* is traced next day to his introducer, who, at the inſtance of Chryſal's maſter is expelled the ſociety for preſuming to ridicule their rights. Farther conſequences of this affair makes the ſuperior break up his monaſtery, and build a church. 199

CHAP. XX.

A farther account of the rules of the convent; with ſome ſtriking inſtances of œconomy. A ſeeming inconſiſtency accounted for, from a principle not ſufficiently underſtood. Some remarkable effects of vanity. Reaſon of the abuſe of wealth. 204

CHAP.

CHAP. XXI.

Account of the members of the ſociety. The hiſtory of the ſuperior. The particular qualifications by which he aroſe in life. Succeſs in a private inſtance encourages him to try his talents in an higher ſphere, from which he ſoon deſcends with diſgrace. A ſtriking inconſiſtency in his character. 208

CHAP. XXII.

Continuation of the hiſtory of the ſuperior. The inconſiſtency in his character accounted for. The reaſon of his being ſent early to travel for education. Political principles all neceſſary to be attended to, in a tutor. The method and effect of his tutor's care to inſtruct him in Religion. A frightful ſtory gives riſe to a frightful dream, which is interrupted ſtill more frightfully. A tremendous apparition terrifies him into a ſwoon. Account of the apparition. 211

CHAP. XXIII.

Continuation. Behaviour of the tutor on finding his pupil in a ſwoon. He recovers; and terrifies his tutor by miſtaking him for a ſaint. Charity begins at home. The tutor ſagaciouſly gueſſes at the meaning of the miſtakes; and piouſly reſolves to improve it. The pupil's full and true account of the apparition, with the tutor's honeſt addition to it. His repentance, and converſion. His tutor moderates his zeal for weighty reaſons. He relapſes; and his tutor for private reaſons divulges the whole affair. The method he took to invalidate the ſtory. 216

CHAP. XXIV.

Account of the members continued. Hiſtory of one who turned libertine, in ſpeculation, after he had loſt the power of being ſo in practice. How this happened; the force of literary vanity; and the reaſon why it is ſtronger than any other. Inſtances of the advantages reaped from encouraging genius. A new method of flattery is ſucceſsful where all others had failed, and by a maſterſtroke makes vanity gain a ſignal triumph over virtue. 221

CHRYSAL:

OR, THE

ADVENTURES

OF A

GUINEA.

BOOK I.

CHAP. I.

Introduction. CHRYSAL *enters into a new ſervice. His maſter finds an ingenious excuſe for returning home; but is unexpectedly ſtopt ſhort by the way. In the common courſe of buſineſs,* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice: Character of his new maſter.*

THERE being a war between Spain and England, CHRYSAL in the ſhape of a Doubloon, is preſented by a Spaniſh governor to the captain of an Engliſh Man of War cruiſing off the coaſt of Mexico, in return for his quitting his ſtation to give him an opportunity of ſending the treaſure to Europe.

'As this was a compliment of great conſequence to the Spaniards, the captain had been ſo handſomely

conſidered for it, that his deſires were ſatisfied, and he only wiſhed to be ſafe at home, to enjoy the wealth he had ſo happily acquired.'——Vol. 1. Page 63.

However impatient though he might be to return, it was neceſſary for him to find ſome pretence to juſtify a conduct ſo contrary to his duty, the time appointed by his ſuperiors for continuing on that ſtation, not being near expired.

But a proper knowledge of the world is never at a loſs for expedients. He immediately came to a right underſtanding with the maſter of the ſhip, who alarming him ſuddenly at midnight with an account that her ſtern-poſt was looſe, and the reſt of the officers between ſleeping and waking formally ſigning his report without examining, he bore away directly for home with an happy heart, anticipating in imagination the enjoyment of all thoſe pleaſures, which he had hitherto looked at with a longing eye from a diſtance.

When man, confiding in his own wiſdom, quits the ſtraight path to ſtrike out a nearer to his wiſhes, he generally blunders into that which leads directly to diſappointment. My maſter had not proceeded many days on his voyage, when he fell in one morning juſt at the dawn, with a mighty fleet, from which it was impoſſible for him to eſcape. His anxiety made him inſtantly conclude them enemies. He curſed his fate in the bitterneſs of his ſoul, and leaving the care of the ſhip to his officers, pretended to be ſick, and threw himſelf on his bed in agonies little ſhort of deſpair. 'Was it for this? (exclaimed he, wringing his hands, and gnaſhing his teeth) was it for this I betrayed my truſt, and favoured the enemies whom I was ſent diſtreſs?—For this did I put my honour in the power

power of a venal wretch, and desert my station, in direct disobedience to my orders? But I am justly rewarded! I have stopped at nothing to gather wealth, and now I lose that and my liberty together. May every villain meet the same fate!'

But the severity of his distress lasted not long. As soon as it was clear day, the fleet which caused his fears was found to be English; the moment he was informed of which he recovered from his sickness, and putting the best face he could upon the matter went to wait upon the Admiral.

Though the fleet which the Admiral commanded was irresistibly superior to any that could possibly be opposed to it, he was so desirous of every addition of strength, that he received my master with evident pleasure; and never enquiring what had been the cause of his quitting his station, informed him whither they were going, and congratulated him on the opportunity he should have of making his fortune.

But this opportunity, promising as it might appear, had no temptations for my master, whose thoughts were turned another way. However, to carry off the chagrin which he could not conceal, he expressed his concern in the strongest terms at not being able to bear a part in so glorious an enterprize, and produced the report of the condition of his ship, by which he was represented to be incapable of service, the reason, as he alledged, for his having quitted his proper station. This instantly changed the whole scene. The Admiral assuming all the consequence of his unbounded authority, answered with a supercilious look, that he would order the ship to be surveyed by the proper offi-

cers, and then turned away without deigning to take any farther notice of him.

As this was no more than my maſter had expected, his knowledge of the world, which brought him into the ſcrape, ſoon ſuggeſted the proper means for preventing any diſagreeable conſequences from it. Accordingly, when the ſurvey was regularly made next morning, he was honourably acquitted; but the maſter of the ſhip was broke for his error, and the other officers ſeverely rebuked, for not having examined his report before they ſigned it.

In the courſe of theſe tranſactions, I changed my ſervice for that of the Admiral's Agent for his own private affairs, who directly gave me to the Admiral in ſome dealings between them.

When I entered into the poſſeſſion of my new maſter, he was lolling in a liſtleſs manner on a ſofa, in his ſtate-room, where every art was exerted to counteract nature, and elude the mid-day heat, in one of the fierceſt climates of the Torrid Zone. A gown of thinneſt ſilk hung looſely over his large limbs; the radiance of the ſun was ſoftened by ſhades of linen drawn before the open windows, and kept conſtantly wet to cool the air as it entered through them; and every diſagreeable ſavour was drowned in the moſt delicate perfumes.

The contraſt between ſuch magnificent luxury, and the condition of thoſe whoſe numbers made his ſtrength, ſhewed in the moſt glaring light the infatuation of vanity, in diſplaying ſuch temptations to its own deſtruction, as the moſt implicit obedience to laws could hardly be ſuppoſed proof to.

The aukwardneſs with which my maſter bore his ſtate ſhewing that it was not natural to him, I looked back

back to his past life, to see by what illustrious actions he had risen to such an exalted station; but to my surprize discovered that the foundation of his fortune had been no more than a phlegmatic indolence and servility of soul, which induced his superiors to entrust power into his hands, without apprehension of its raising him to a consequence that might clash with their designs on any future occasion.

I see you are astonished that a person of such a turn should ever engage in active scenes, or be entrusted with the conduct of an enterprize so opposite to his disposition, as to make success improbable. To unexperienced reason such things must seem unaccountable; but the least acquaintance with the ways of man would soon reconcile you to greater absurdities. The convenience of the parent, not the genius of the child, is in general the only thing considered in the choice of a profession on which the success of life depends; and this is the reason why so few are eminent in things so easy to be eminent in; and when at length a person may have it in his power to quit a profession which he did not chuse, it is too late for him to chuse another, and therefore he plods on with habitual indifference, not knowing what else to do with himself.

This may remove your surprize as far as it concerns my master's first entering into, and continuing in such a way of life. As to his fitness for so difficult and important a command, that it was the thing least thought of when it was intrusted to him. The insignificancy of his character, and his servility to his superiors pointed him out as the person proper for their purpose, as they not only made them secure that he would not go beyond their orders, but would also put

it in their power to arrogate to themſelves the merit of ſucceſs, or lay the blame of miſcarriage upon him; and for theſe great qualifications only did they chuſe him on this occaſion to execute the deſign of another, who had been guilty of the unpardonable crime of ſhewing that he knew more than themſelves, and whoſe penetration and activity of ſoul might too probably have made him ſee through their deſigns, and puſh matters farther than was conſiſtent with them.

CHAP. II.

Motives of the enterprize in which CHRYSAL's *maſter was engaged. In a private conference between him and his agent, ſome curious ſecrets, in a buſineſs not generally underſtood, are laid open, and a ſeeming contradiction naturally reconciled.*

WHENEVER England is at war with any of her neighbours, the effects are felt to the extremities of the globe. The armament which my maſter now commanded was ſent againſt one of the moſt important and wealthieſt ſettlements of the Spaniards in that part of the world, not indeed with an ambitious deſign of annexing it to the ſtate, or reimburſing any part of the expences of the war, but merely to diſtreſs the enemy by its deſtruction, and enrich thoſe immediately employed in the conqueſt; the proſpect of which, and the conſequent ſchemes to accompliſh it, ſo entirely engroſſed the attention of them all, except my maſter, that they diſregarded the difficulties, and ran ſo eagerly into the dangers of the attempt, though ſuch and ſo many as were ſufficient to have damped the ardour of any

any beings directed by reaſon, and not inſenſible to the firſt principle of human action, that his phlegmatic diſpoſition was no impediment to their ſucceſs, as it left them at liberty to purſue ſuch meaſures as the inſtant occaſion ſhould ſhew to be expedient, without the delay of conſulting him.——I ſay, 'except my maſter;' for not all the cares of ſo extenſive a command, all the hurry and buſtle around him, could ever ruffle the characteriſtic ſtagnation of his mind.

He was juſt awoke from his noon-tide nap, when his Agent laid the bag in which I was upon his table, along with ſome papers. The chink of the gold inſtantly attracted his attention. 'Eh!' (ſaid he, rubbing his eyes and yawning) 'what is it o'clock?'—And being told, 'Ay!' (continued he, ſtretching and yawning again) 'I thought I had overſlept myſelf, I am ſo heavy! This climate is fit for nothing but ſleeping.'—Then riſing languidly, 'What papers are theſe?' (ſaid he) 'Did I not ſay I would not be troubled about buſineſs?' 'They are your own accounts, for the outſets of this expedition, (anſwered the Agent) which if you pleaſe you had better look over now, as we ſhall have others to attend to ſoon. I am ſorry to ſay it does not anſwer your expectations, but the people alledged that they had been made to pay ſo extravagantly for their contracts, that it was impoſſible for them to ſink the qualities of the ſtores ſo low, as to be able to give you any thing on that account, ſo that all your profit is reduced to the one article of ſhort-tale; and in this too every Captain muſt go ſnacks.'

'Not able to give me any thing!' ſaid the Admiral, who had been rouſed from his lethargic indifference, by the firſt mention of his own affairs, 'They lie, the ſcoundrels;

ſcoundrels; and I'll make them know it. The ſick-liſts ſhew that they have ſunk them with a vengeance, and beyond every degree of reaſon; and if they think that I'll connive at their murdering the men, without having any ſhare in the profit, they ſhall find themſelves damnably out in their reckoning: and therefore do you go to every Purſer in the fleet, and bid them to have a ſurvey privately made of the worſt ſtores, to produce when I call for it. I'll make them come down, and handſomely too; or they ſhall repent it.'——

'But Sir, (replied the Clerk) is not there danger that they may diſcover the affair of the ſhort-tale, in revenge for ſuch an attack; and that they who made the contract with them may be ſo offended as to hinder your being ever employed again?'

'I care not!' (returned the Admiral, clapping his hands a-kimbo) 'I care not for their being offended! ——-Not I! I don't deſire to be employed. If I mind my hits this time, I ſhall be as rich as the beſt of them, and will ſtay at home and take my eaſe as well as they: and as to what you ſay of their diſcovering the affair of the ſhort-tale, that only ſhews your ignorance. They would loſe more by that than I ſhould, as they have made every thing ſo damn'd bad, and are paid for the whole compliment. Beſides, don't you conſider whom they are to complain to? No! No! We ſhall hardly expoſe one another! Things and things hang together too cloſe for that! One is as deep in the mud as the other is in the mire.'

'But may not they ſpread ſtories abroad, which may injure your character with the public?'——

'My character, do you ſay? Not in the leaſt. Such ſtories affect only the Clerks, and ſuch low people, whoſe

whoſe perquiſites thoſe things are reputed to be, and who only appear in them; but that can't be ſaid to injure them neither, for what Clerk ever had a character that could be injured! Hah! Hah! Hah! So that your care for character forſooth is quite unneceſſary! Do what you will, you cannot ſuffer in that. All you have to do is to mind your buſineſs, and when you have got money, no one will enquire about your character.'——

'Then Sir, I preſume the account muſt ſtand open as it is, till we go back to ſettle thoſe affairs.'——

'Aye!—Or ſtay! You may leave it with me. It will amuſe me to look it over when I have nothing elſe to do! And you may pay in whatever money you have got too. I can give you a receipt on account.'——

'That's right Sir,' (ſaid the Clerk turning back, as recollecting himſelf) 'I ſhould be glad to know what poundage you will require of the ſutlers for the proviſions they ſhall take on ſhore. Several of them have applied to me to know.'

'Only twenty ſhillings in the pound! (anſwered the Admiral) Cent. per Cent. on the firſt coſt.'

'Perhaps, Sir, (replied the Clerk) you don't conſider that the General will expect his compoſition too.'——

'Well! and what is his compoſition to me? Let them give him as much more if they will. They can afford it well enough. They may charge as high as they pleaſe; their cuſtomers cannot help themſelves. They muſt pay any price, rather than ſtarve, ſince they have no where elſe to go.

'But you need not give yourſelf any concern about this. The general and I have agreed to act in concert, and

and divide equally between us every profit that can be made while we continue together, ſo that all you have to do is to meet his private Agent, and ſettle matters with him.'

'I am very glad you have come to a good underſtanding with each other!' (ſaid the Agent, applying equivocally to the Admiral, what he really meant of himſelf) 'It would otherwiſe have been impoſſible to avoid diſagreements, as your intereſts would have claſhed in ſo many inſtances, than which nothing can be more dangerous in ſuch affairs as ours, for fear of improper diſcoveries; but where all parties underſtand each other rightly, buſineſs goes on with pleaſure and ſucceſs.'

Theſe weighty matters being thus adjuſted, the Agent withdrew, when my maſter walked a turn or two about his great cabin, and then opening the money bag, and telling the contents but a few pieces, among which I was, into his pocket, and locked up the reſt in his ſtrong box, after which he threw himſelf again on the ſofa, to reſt after the fatigue of ſo much buſineſs.

You ſeem at a loſs how to reconcile the ſentiments which my maſter diſcovered in this conference, with the luxury and magnificence of every thing about him. But they contradict not each other in the leaſt. In the tranſactions with his Agent, he ſhewed the genuine motions of his heart; but with the other he has nothing to do. They are entirely at the expence of the public, though in a manner not obvious to every eye, being a kind of tax eſtabliſhed by cuſtom on the Purſers of men of war, under the appearance indeed of a preſent to their commanders, but in reality as a bribe for conniving at their impoſitions; and this tax it is that enables

bles thoſe commanders to live up to their rank, which their juſt pay would never do: a ſtriking inſtance of that wiſe œconomy, which to ſave a penny lays a man under a neceſſity of ſtealing a pound.

CHAP. III.

The behaviour of CHRYSAL'S *maſter on hearing an intereſting piece of news, with his conciſe method of conducting an enterprize.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice for that of a perſon of a very different character. An eloquent ſpeech, and produces the uſual effects of eloquence.*

MY maſter had not paſſed his time long in this agreeable manner, when the officer next to him in command entered haſtily, and told him in a tranſport of joy, that the man at his maſt-head had made the land.

'What land?' (ſaid my maſter, unmoved at the news, or the manner in which it was delivered by the other, whoſe eyes flaſhed fire as he ſpoke) 'what land does he make.'

'The place of our deſtination! (replied the officer:) I had juſt then taken an obſervation myſelf, and am convinced I am right.'——

'Well then (returned my maſter) if you are ſure it is the place, here are your inſtructions. You are to lead the van, and cover the landing, about which proper directions will be given by the General: when that is done you ſhall have farther orders.'——Then ſwelling with the thought of his own conſequence, and reſolving to ſupport his dignity by an uncommon effort of generoſity, 'Has the fellow who made the land (ſaid he) been rewarded for his news?'

'Not

'Not yet; (anſwered the officer) the moment I heard it, I ran up myſelf to the maſt-head, and as ſoon as I was convinced it was true, flew to acquaint you. But I ſhall remember him when I go back.

'And pray when you do, give him this in my name,' (replied my maſter, putting his hand into his pocket, and reaching me to him;) 'the men's ſpirits muſt be kept up. We ſhall have warm work of it; warm work!'——

'Glorious work,' (added the officer) the trophies of your fame will now be eſtabliſhed in the oppoſite extremities of the globe. Few attain ſuch happineſs.'

'Aye!' (ſaid the Admiral, puffing and ſweating with the ſenſe of his great atchievements) 'I have done ſomething to be talked of in more places than one. I have endured the ſeverities of various climates. But we muſt bear every thing in the ſervice of our country! We muſt bear every thing without complaining.'

'Have you any farther commands, Sir? (ſaid the officer) It is proper I ſhould be on board. I ſee ſeveral of the ſhips have now made the ſignal of ſeeing land.'——

'Nothing more at this time (anſwered the Admiral.) You have your orders, and will take the beſt method to execute them. If you ſhould be at a loſs at any time, you may apply to me. I ſhall be in my proper ſtation in the rear, attentive to every thing that is doing.

My new maſter on this withdrew, leaving the Admiral to enjoy the contemplation of his own conſequence, and keep himſelf cool till dinner.

If the indolence of my late maſter was inconſiſtent with his ſtation, the activity of my preſent ſeemed to exceed the abilities of a human being. The moment he

got to his own ſhip, he made a ſignal for all the captains in his diviſion, and the General, to come on board him; and then ordering his ſhip's crew to be called aft, he went to the barricadoes, and waving his hat over his head, 'Courage, my lads! (ſaid he) the day is ours. The Admiral has given us leave to take yonder town with all the treaſure in it, ſo that we have nothing to do now but make our fortunes as faſt as we can, for the place can never hold out againſt us. The Purſer will give every brave fellow a cann of punch to drink proſperity to old England, and then we'll go about our buſineſs with ſpirit. We ſhall all be as rich as Jews. The place is paved with gold, which the lubberly Dons have gathered for us. Old England for ever is the word, and the day is ours.'

This eloquent harangue had the effect that eloquence always has, it tranſported the hearers out of their ſenſes. They anſwered with three chears, which made the welkin ring, and then went ſkipping and dancing with joy to get their punch, a foretaſte of their good fortune, which many of them would not have given up for all their expectations.

As they were going off, my maſter happened to ſee among the crowd the man who had firſt diſcovered the land, and calling to him, 'Here ſhip mate,' (ſaid he, giving him a Doubloon) 'here is ſomething the Admiral has ſent you for your good look-out; and take this alſo from me; (giving him another) and I hope to give you an hundred more for hoiſting your colours on the top of yonder walls.'----

'Aye! noble Captain,' (ſaid the ſailor, ſhrugging his ſhoulders, and making his beſt bow) 'and ſo I will,

or it ſhall coſt me a worſe fall, than from the main-top-gallant-maſt-head, that is when the ſhip takes a heel! I'll pull down proud Spain, and clap old England in its place.'

The ſpirit which my maſter ſhewed in every word and action intereſted me ſo far in his favour, that I was pleaſed at his not having parted with me on this occaſion.

By this time the General and the Captains were come on board, and being ſhewn into the great cabin, 'Good news, gentlemen,' (ſaid my maſter in an extaſy, ſhaking every one of them by the hand as they entered) 'I bring you good news! Yonder is the object of our hopes, the place that is to make our fortunes, and crown us with glory, if it is not our own faults; for the Admiral has given us general orders to proceed in the beſt manner we can, and without loſing time or opportunity in waiting to conſult him on every occaſion; ſo that if we fail the fault will be entirely ours, as I ſaid before, as alſo will the glory of ſucceſs.'

This news filled them all with the higheſt ſpirits. They congratulated each other on a ſucceſs of which they made no doubt; and having concerted the meaſures proper to be taken, returned to their ſhips to carry them into inſtant execution.

CHAP.

CHAP. IV.

A characteriſtic conference between CHRYSAL'S *new maſter, and his friend the general. Remarks on war; with the cauſes and conſequence of ſeveral celebrated victories. A motive not commonly attended to, for courage in ſoldiers and ſubaltern officers, accounts politically for ſome apparent wrongs which they ſuffer.*

AS ſoon as the Captains were gone, my maſter turned to the General, for whom he had a particular regard, and embracing him eagerly, 'Now, my deareſt friend, (ſaid he) you will have an opportunity not only of gaining ſuch glory as will add luſtre to the dignity of your birth, but alſo of acquiring a fortune to ſupport that dignity properly. But what is the matter? You do not ſeem affected at the happy proſpect! are not you well?'

'Well!' (anſwered the General, ſhrugging up his ſhoulders) 'Yes, I am well enough as yet; but know not how long I ſhall continue ſo, in this damn'd place, the heat of which ſeems to have ſet you on fire.'

'Damn'd place do you call it?' (replied my maſter, vexed to the ſoul in the manner which the other ſpoke) 'It will be an happy place for you, if it is not your own fault, a much happier place than where I ſuppoſe you wiſh to be, gaming at the coffee-houſe, or cracking jeſts for your patron over a bottle. But take care! The eyes of all your officers are upon you, and if they ſhould obſerve this indifference, it would ruin you for ever. They would directly attribute it to want of

ſpirit, on the leaſt ſuſpicion of which your patron would caſt you off with contempt and abhorrence, and never intereſt himſelf more in your behalf, and you know with what difficulties he obtained this command for you; ſo much indeed, that gratitude to him ſhould make you exert yourſelf if you had no other motive, as he in a manner ſtaked his character for you. Come! ſtir! You will be in no danger. Your poſt exempts you from that. All you have to do is to appear animated and alert; and give your orders with fire. Your officers are to encounter all the dangers.'

'As for the dangers of war,' (returned the General, ſtung by the implication in the latter part of what my maſter had ſaid) 'I diſregard them as much as any man. But this damn'd climate is the thing. I hate the thought of fighting with an inviſible enemy, of ſucking in diſeaſes and death with my breath; and then beſides I hate all trouble ſo much too, that I would this moment give up the proſpect of glory, which you ſeem ſo ſtruck with, to be at home ſafe, and at my eaſe.'--But the proſpect of gain! Would you give up that too? I have often heard you paſſionately lament your want of a fortune ſuitable to your rank, and now you have it in your power to acquire it. But if you miſs this opportunity.'----

'May I never get another!----No! no! I ſhall hardly give up that! I will not neglect any thing in my power to acquire a fortune! But what did you mean juſt now, by ſaying you'd go yourſelf in your long boat to head the men! Sure that is not neceſſary.'----

'Aye! And you muſt go too for this time! There is no poſſibility of diſpenſing with it. But this will be the

the only night you need ſtay on ſhore, or expoſe yourſelf to any danger. You may go on board every night after this, and ſleep in quiet and ſafety; for there will be little or no danger by day. All the work muſt be done by night.'——

'My deareſt friend, and if I may, I will. It is but ſaying that the night air does not agree with me, and no one will dare to mutter a word to the contrary.'——

'Come then! let us move! The men will do their duty with double ſpirts when they ſee us in earneſt. I am as deſirous of making and enjoying a fortune as you can be; but would make it with as much credit as poſſible tho'; and to convince you that I conſult your credit alſo, your couſin ſhall go with me, and give out whatever orders I ſee proper, as if they came immediately from you. Only do not you betray the contrary by your inattention. Conſider what immenſe treaſure there is in the place, and what a noble ſhare of it will fall to you.'——

'Aye! Aye! Let us but once come to ſharing the plunder, and I'll engage to be as alert and attentive as the beſt of you all. Never fear me at that work. No one ſhall get the ſtart of me there. As you ſay I muſt ſtay on ſhore to night though, I'll juſt ſee my night-dreſs put up ready, to take with me, with a febrifuge, two or three juleps, and ſome ptiſane to guard againſt the worſt, and then I'll be with you; though I wiſh it were poſſible to avoid going on ſhore this night. There will be ſuch hurry and confuſion in landing the men, that I ſhall unavoidably put myſelf in an heat, and that is very dangerous in the night-air; but I'll take a purge in the morning to carry it off.'—

'Prithee don't think of ſuch things now. Your

officers all expect you, and it is time you were with them, ſo remember the conſequence, and exert yourſelf with ſpirit. The ſucceſs of this affair will enable you to ſpend the reſt of your life as you pleaſe.'—

CHAP. V.

An officer deſires to ſpeak with the general, the mention of whom introduces a remarkable inſtance of ignorance of the world. Anecdotes of the officer; with the bad conſequences of a ſubaltern's attempting to diſtinguiſh himſelf in the army.

MY maſter then embraced his friend, and each was juſt going to attend the buſineſs of his ſeparate department, when a ſubaltern officer, in one of the regiments under the General's command, deſired to ſpeak with him directly on matters of the moſt earneſt importance.

At the mention of the officer's name, the General ſhewed the ſtrongeſt diſguſt. 'Damn that meddling fellow (ſaid he peeviſhly) what would he be at now? I ſuppoſe this is one of his romantic ſchemes to diſtinguiſh himſelf! I am not at leiſure! Let him wait.'

'Pray who is this?' (ſaid my maſter, not a little ſurprized at the manner in which the General ſpoke) 'And what ſcheme can he propoſe, that ſhould give you ſuch offence?'

'He is an hot-headed ignorant fellow; (anſwered the General) who knows ſo little of the world, as to think of riſing in the army, by his merit, as he calls it; and for that purpoſe, not content with doing his duty, is always ſeeking unneceſſary dangers, in order forſooth to

to diſtinguiſh himſelf; though his own experience, as well as general obſervation, might long ſince have convinced him of the folly of ſuch a ſcheme, as he never has been in any action in which he has not found means to make himſelf remarkable; and ſtill ſo far from riſing, he has had the mortification to ſee himſelf evidently ſlighted, and younger officers daily put over his head, for no other reaſon, but becauſe they behaved in a leſs offenſive manner.'

—'I don't underſtand you. What offence can poſſibly be taken at a man's ſtriving to diſtinguiſh himſelf in a profeſſion, where emulation is in a manner eſſential to ſucceſs?'

—'Perhaps it may in the navy! But ſhew me, if you can, one inſtance in the army of a man's riſing by that kind of merit? No! no! our rule is directly the contrary. A ſubaltern's attempting to diſtinguiſh himſelf is an affront to his ſuperiors, not to be forgiven, as it implies a ſaucy deſign of putting himſelf into competition with them, for the good opinion of the public; and therefore ſuch attempts are always diſcountenanced. If it were otherwiſe, no man of fortune or intereſt would ever enter into the army, as he could not think of enjoying his eaſe, or ſhewing a prudent regard to his ſafety, on any occaſion, without being liable to be expoſed to diſgraceful compariſons, by the impertinent aſſiduity, or raſhneſs, of every hot-headed or beggarly fellow, who has no way of being able to live but by ſhewing his diſregard for life, and all its pleaſures. Indeed poverty may poſſibly ſeem to be ſome excuſe for ſuch behaviour; but this man has not that to plead. He is above want, and acts in this manner merely from an

ambitious,

ambitious, turbulent ſpirit, that muſt be kept under. You ſeem ſurpriſed at what I ſay; but I'll give you an inſtance or two of the effects of this very man's paſſion for diſtinguiſhing himſelf, in more ways than one, which will convince you of the neceſſity of a General's ſuppreſſing every tendency to emulation of that kind in the army.'

'In our laſt attempt upon the coaſt of Spain, a young gentleman of family and fortune took a whim to go as a volunteer with the General, merely to indulge curioſity, and have ſomething to talk of among the ladies, on his return. As they were on their voyage, the gentleman unluckily happened to fall into company with this officer, who, on hearing him talk away careleſsly, in the confidence of his great fortune, had the aſſurance to tell him, that courage did not conſiſt in words; but that when they ſhould meet the enemy, he himſelf would give him an opportunity of proving his, by keeping him company.

'The gentleman, never conſidering that his ſituation in life raiſed him above emulation with one ſo much below him, thought ſuch a challenge could not be refuſed; and accordingly the day that our troops were beat off, in his way to the ſea-ſide unluckily meeting this man, who with his uſual deſign of diſtinguiſhing himſelf, had officiouſly drawn the company to which he belonged, and which he had ſo endeared himſelf to by a mean attention to relieving their wants, when not occaſioned by their own faults, that they would follow him any where; and made a ſtand in a place of ſuch danger, that no one but himſelf would have thought of taking poſt there, in order to cover the embarkation of ſuch as could eſcape; and remembering what had

paſſed

paſſed between them on board, would needs ſtop with him, here he was killed by the very firſt fire of the enemy, as it was the greateſt odds but every one of them muſt have been, unſupported as they were; though it appeared afterwards, that had the General poſted a proper force in that very place at firſt, or even reinforced him, the retreat might have been regular, and the greateſt part of the heavy loſs which he ſuffered ſaved. But that was no buſineſs of this man's; and it was the higheſt impudence in one of his ſtation to take ſuch a ſtep, without orders, as muſt neceſſarily expoſe the neglect of his General, and draw diſgrace upon him; for which reaſon any General would rather even loſe a battle, than owe it to ſuch means, as muſt take away the credit of it from him in that manner.'

CHAP. VI.

Continued. The officer acquits himſelf of the imputation of ingratitude by a piece of fooliſh generoſity. He perſuades the ſoldier, who had ſaved his life, to quit the army, for an uncommon reaſon. The conſequences of ſuch conduct, with an hint of the beſt qualifications for riſing in the army.

'NOR was this the only inſtance in which this man's paſſion for diſtinguiſhing himſelf was attended with diſagreeable conſequences on that occaſion.

'As he was ſwimming to the boats, (for he had ſtaid ſo long to cover the eſcape of others, that when the remains of his little party was at length broke by the whole body of the enemy's army, and driven to the ſea-ſide, there was not a boat near to take them off, ſo that

that he had no other way of eſcaping himſelf, but by plunging into the ſea, and ſwimming after them) he was ſo encumbered with his cloaths, that he was in the greateſt danger of being drowned, which one of his men, who ſwam better, happening to perceive, and knowing by his dreſs that he was an officer, he ſaved him, without diſtinguiſhing in the confuſion of ſuch a ſituation, who he was.

'As ſoon as the officer came to himſelf in the boat, (for he was ſo near being drowned as to have loſt his ſenſes) and underſtood what had happened, he turned to the ſoldier, and telling him ſlightly, that it was very well, proceeded to exert himſelf in his uſual officious manner, in ſaving as many others, who were in the ſame circumſtances, from which he had juſt eſcaped himſelf, as he could; while all his ſuperior officers, who had taken care to get off in time were refreſhing themſelves after their fatigue and fright; without taking any farther notice of the ſoldier who had ſaved him; though every one thought he ſhould have given the poor fellow a guinea or two at leaſt, in reward for his good-nature, and failed not to rail at him loudly for neglecting it.

'Beſides the pitifulneſs and ingratitude of ſuch behaviour, there was another circumſtance that made it look ſtill worſe, which was, that he had had this very ſoldier ſeverely puniſhed for ſome fault, juſt before they had embarked on this expedition, ſo that it appeared like perſiſting in perſonal malice to him. For he is not ſatisfied with diſtinguiſhing himſelf only in time of action. Even before the war was thought of, his attention to diſcipline gave equal offence, as it put every officer in the regiment to the trouble of minding matters,

matters, which otherwiſe they ſhould never have thought about, in order to avoid impertinent compariſons.

'But all the railing of the men, and reflections of the officers, had no effect upon him. He minded his buſineſs with his uſual aſſiduity and ſtrictneſs, nor ever ſeemed to think of what had happened during the whole voyage home.

'But this was only affectation, to make what he intended to do the more remarkable. As ſoon as the troops were landed in England, he ordered the ſoldier to come one morning to his quarters, and bring his wife with him.

'The common motive for ſuch orders was far from raiſing him in the opinion of any who heard of it. However many ſimilar inſtances convincing the ſoldier that he muſt obey, they went accordingly; where after a few common queſtions,' 'I have ſent for you, brother ſoldier, (ſaid the officer) to make you ſome return for the ſervice you did me. Here is your diſcharge from the regiment. You were bred to a good trade, and have had time to be cooled from the follies which firſt made you liſt in the army; and your wife is an induſtrious honeſt woman, ſo that there is no danger but you may do very well in your buſineſs, to ſet you up in which here is an hundred pounds; and ſo take care of yourſelf, and God bleſs you.'

'Sir! Sir! noble Sir!' (ſaid the ſoldier, overcome with ſuch unexpected generoſity) 'I humbly thank your honour; but why my diſcharge? I'll never quit you. I'll live and die with you! I'll follow your honour to the mouth of a cannon! I don't deſire my diſcharge.'——

'I don't believe you do!' (anſwered the officer) nor do

do I in the leaſt doubt your bravery. But I cannot have you under my command. Your careleſſneſs has often led you into faults which have obliged me to puniſh you, as it too probably may again. Now, after the ſervice you have done me, I never could bear the thought of having you puniſhed, and I never will have any man under me who ſhall eſcape puniſhment, when he commits a fault that deſerves it; ſo that we muſt part. My advice to you, as your friend, is to return to your own country, and follow your buſineſs; and if I ſee that you make a good uſe of what I have now given you, I ſhall be ready to aſſiſt you farther. But if you chuſe to continue in the army, any regiment will readily receive you.'

'No!' (replied the fellow ſobbing and blubbering) no! ſince I muſt not ſtay with you, I will ſerve under no one elſe.'——

'Now what do you think was the conſequence of this vanity? Why truly, he diſtinguiſhed himſelf ſo much by it, that no other officer met with any reſpect from the ſoldiers after, who were continually crying him up for his generoſity, to excite others to follow his fooliſh example, and throw away their money in relieving the diſtreſs of a parcel of fellows, whom they have nothing to do with, and the government is obliged to take care of, if they were worth any care, after they are paſt doing farther ſervice.'

'But the General ſhewed proper reſentment of ſuch impertinence, and put an officer younger by many years, over his head, to reward the pains he had taken to diſtinguiſh himſelf. No! no! that is not the way to riſe in the army now-a-days. Where a man has neither money nor intereſt to puſh him forward, being

able to ſing a good ſong, or pimp well, or having a handſome wife, or ſiſter with a proper degree of humility and complaiſance, will avail him more than all the courage and conduct in romance.'

CHAP. VII.

CHRYSAL's maſter draws ſome intereſting compariſons between the land and ſea ſervices, which account for the different ſucceſs in them. The officer is admitted, and put under arreſt for preſuming to do more than his duty.

IT is remarked that men ſeldom enquire into the cauſes of things continually before their eyes. Habitual acquaintance prevents that curioſity, which is one of the greateſt incentives to knowledge. They have always ſeen ſuch things; and therefore have never enquired how they came to be ſo. My maſter, who had long obſerved the fact, but never thought of the cauſe, was at firſt a good deal ſurprized at what his friend ſaid. After ſome pauſe, 'I am afraid what you ſay is too true,' (ſaid he) 'and I am ſorry for it. The ſervice would go on much better if it were otherwiſe, as you ſee ours does; many of the moſt eminent commanders in which have raiſed themſelves from the very loweſt ſtations, merely by that kind of merit, which you take ſuch pains to diſcourage.'——

'That may be ſo' (anſwered the General;) 'but the caſe of your ſervice and ours is quite different. Every captain of a man of war, when on a ſeparate cruiſe, acts as a General in Chief; and even in a fleet, his force is ſo immediately collected under his own

command, and ſeparated from every other, that it is in ſome meaſure in the nature of a detachment, ſo that in both caſes, he has a right to do whatever he thinks proper, without danger of giving offence to any one elſe.

'But how ſhould you like to have one of your midſhipmen, or lieutenants, running every minute to you with advice, or preſuming to ſtrike out new methods for working the ſhip in a gale of wind, or fighting her in time of action?'

——'Perhaps not very well, without he had beforehand ſhewed me the advantage of ſuch new methods, and then I ſhould moſt readily adopt them, without ever conſidering whom they came from. But indeed there is a more eſſential difference between your ſervice and ours, than you have taken notice of, which is that every man muſt be a ſtated time a ſubaltern (a midſhipman) before he can by any intereſt be promoted to an higher rank; which time is ſufficient for him to acquire a competent degree of knowledge in his buſineſs, and which time he can ſcarcely apply to any thing elſe, as from the ſituation he muſt be in for the greateſt part of it, (at ſea) he has nothing elſe to which he can apply himſelf; and this, and the ſpirit of emulation, for the exertion of which their acting ſeparately affords them, as you obſerve, the moſt advantageous opportunities, may poſſibly be the reaſons why ſo many diſtinguiſh themſelves, (if I may uſe the word without offence!) among us ſo glorioufly, and with ſuch advantage to their country; while the officers of the army, for want of due encouragement to perſonal merit, become diſpirited, and indifferent to the ſucceſs of a ſervice

vice in which they have no hopes of riſing, by any means in their own power.'

'A ſevere remarker might perhaps account for this diſcouragement to emulation, and neglect of perſonal merit in the army, from motives not much to the credit of the commanders, and ſay, that as they had not riſen by ſuch themſelves, they looked with an invidious eye upon them, as a reproach to their own want of both. Indeed it cannot be juſt to expect that a General, who has ſpent his life in paying court to a miniſter, or favourite, or who was preferred only for his intereſt in Parliament, ſhould underſtand the minutiæ of his duty, and ſee the neceſſity of encouraging a merit, the want of which was no obſtacle to his own preferment.——But this is an evil beyond our power to redreſs, though till it is redreſſed, matters can never go on with that ſucceſs, which a contrary conduct would make certain.

'However, I think you had better ſee this gentleman. Perhaps he may have ſomething to inform you of, worth your attention. At any rate, it is not proper to throw any damp on courage at ſuch a time as this.'

The General, who ſeldom diſputed my maſter's opinion, accordingly ordered him to be admitted, and enquiring what was his buſineſs, 'Sir! ſaid the officer, I come to inform you, that I have diſcovered a proper place for landing the troops, which I will undertake to make good, with only two hundred men of the regiment to which I belong, againſt all the force of the enemy, if I am permitted to go directly, before they have time to throw up any works there.'——

'You have diſcovered, Sir!' (anſwered the General haughtily) 'I do not underſtand you! Pray when did you make this notable diſcovery?'——

'Juſt now, Sir;' (replied the officer, not in the leaſt diſconcerted at the manner in which the General ſpoke) 'the tranſport in which I was happening to ſtretch away a-head, I got out a boat, and have reconnoitred a great part of the coaſt, in the thick of the enemy's fire.'——

—'And pray who ordered you to reconnoitre in this manner?'

'No one, Sir; I never wait for orders to do any thing that I think for the advantage of the ſervice.'

'Then, Sir, I'll have you to know, that no man under my command ſhall take upon him to do any thing without orders. He is a good man who does his duty; and I deſire no more.'——

—'But though you may not expreſsly deſire it, Sir, I hope it is no perſonal offence to you, for an officer to ſtrive to diſtinguiſh himſelf!

—'Perſonal offence! What do you mean, Sir! I do not underſtand you!'——

—'I am ſurprized at that, Sir! I think my meaning pretty plain.'——

—'Sir, I care not what you think; but I'll make you bridle your tongue.'——

—'Bridle my tongue! That is not in your power, Sir; nor perhaps my hands either, at a proper time. I will ſay what I know to be juſt; and do what I have a right to do, without being brow-beaten by any man.'——

—'And ſo will I, Sir, do what I have a right to do; I will this moment put you in arreſt, for your inſolence, and keep you there till you have learned how to behave yourſelf more properly to your ſuperiors.'—

The General inſtantly put his threats in execution, ſending

ſending him, burſting with indignation at ſuch treatment, under arreſt, to the ſhip to which he belonged.

The converſation between the General and the officer had been carried on ſo rapidly, that my maſter had not any opportunity of interfering. As ſoon as he was gone, 'I heartily wiſh (ſaid he dryly) this affair had not been carried to ſuch extremity. It will have an ugly appearance at this time, and may be made very bad uſe of, in caſe of any unforeſeen diſappointment.'

'Why! why! (ſaid the General, ſcarce recovered from his paſſion) How could I help it? Would you have me bear to be inſulted, and threatened in that manner, without ſhewing the reſentment proper for my ſtation?'——

'By no means! When things had gone ſo far, I do not ſee how you could avoid doing what you have done. I only wiſh you had treated him at firſt in another manner; and not provoked him beyond his reaſon. I own I have conceived a favourable opinion of him. He appeared to be actuated by true zeal, and ſpoke with the cool firmneſs of a ſoldier, till he was put off his guard. To be ſure there was a great impropriety in his going to reconnoitre in that manner, as it may draw the attention of the enemy that way; but then he might have been told of that, without treating him with ſuch haughtineſs.'——

—'Very true! it was very improper! I wiſh I had thought of that! But the inſolence of his coming to adviſe one, and preſuming to act without orders, put it out of my head.'——

—'What is paſt cannot be helped now; but do not do any thing farther to-day, and I'll try to make it up

ſome way to-morrow, before it can be known, or have any bad conſequences.'——

The friends then parted, though neither quite ſo well ſatisfied with the other as before this affair.

CHAP. VIII.

The affair is made up by Chrysal's *maſter, on the General's making an apology to the officer, and accounting candidly for what he had done. The officer quits the army, leaving an intereſting piece of inſtruction behind him.——Some ſhort but ſtriking ſketches of the progreſs of the enterprize.*

I SEE you are anxious for the fate of this officer. To ſatisfy your curioſity, and avoid being obliged to break the thread of my narrative with the ſequel of this ſtory at another time, I will give it to you now.

At the inſtance of my maſter, the general ſent the next morning to diſcharge the officer from the arreſt; but he, conſcious of his innocence, and glowing with reſentment for the indignity offered to his honour, refuſed to ſtir, till his character ſhould be cleared by a court-martial, which he therefore reſolutely demanded as his right.

This embarraſſed the General not a little. However, after ſome days, when the officer's patience was pretty well tried, and the ſevere loſſes he had ſuſtained in the courſe of the ſiege made the worth of ſuch men more attended to, my maſter attacked him, on his foible, his principles of honour, and zeal for the ſervice of his country, and prevailed on him to return to his duty, on the General's making him an apology for what had paſſed,

paſſed, which, taking the hint from my maſter, he attributed entirely to his apprehenſion of the enemies being put on their guard by his reconnoitring, ſo as to prevent his landing the troops at that place, as he had before deſigned; and to conceal the diſgrace he had ſuffered, he not only expreſſed this publicly, and treated him with an appearance of uncommon reſpect during the ſiege, but alſo on his return home, to avoid ſome conſequences which might not have been ſo very agreeable to him; when the officer, no longer immediately under his command, made a reſolute demand of perſonal ſatisfaction, repeated his former apology in the moſt public manner and obliging terms, and affected to uſe his intereſt to get him promoted, but too coolly to ſucceed, ſo univerſal was the offence taken at his preſuming to think of diſtinguiſhing himſelf, by a conduct which gave trouble to his equals to imitate, and reflected diſgrace on his ſuperiors, who had never practiſed the like themſelves.

The conſequence at length was, that after repeated breaches of direct promiſe to do him juſtice, he thought it proper to quit a ſervice, in which he had ſpent the prime of his life with credit, but without advantage, in order to ſhew an honeſt reſentment, and avoid the mortification of meeting farther neglect; leaving behind him this important inſtruction, purchaſed by his dear experience, that perſonal merit is quite unneceſſary in a ſubaltern officer, and an obſtacle, not an aſſiſtance, to his riſing in the army.---But to return to my ſtory.

You muſt not expect a circumſtantial detail of the progreſs of this enterprize. The operations of war are too confuſed to give pleaſure to reaſon in the repreſentation, too horrid not to give pain to humanity.

I ſee

I ſee you think this remark too ſevere; but that is the effect of prejudice. When the victories, which have been blazoned higheſt, and reflected the greateſt glory on thoſe who gained them, are ſtripped of the falſe colourings, laid on only to dazzle and deceive, and examined coolly, moſt of them will be found to have been owing to ſome unforeſeen accident, ſome lucky improvement of a blunder of the enemy, or elſe an obſtinate perſeverance in their own, after every boaſted rule of art has been broken through, every reſource of judgment exhauſted in vain; and to have been attended by circumſtances of ſuch miſery and loſs to victors as well as vanquiſhed, as blaſted every glory, and infinitely over-balanced all advantage poſſible to be gained by them. I ſhall therefore barely touch upon ſuch particulars as may ſerve to give a ſketch of the character of thoſe concerned in them.

The ardour ſhewn by the ſubaltern officers and private men, when they received orders for landing, was impoſſible to be accounted for from any other principle than diſregard to a life deſtitute of every comfort and convenience that could endear it; a remark which, to the humane wiſdom of ſome, may ſeem to juſtify the deficiency and badneſs of every kind of proviſion made for their ſupport; while thoſe whoſe more exalted rank may be thought to animate them with a ſenſe of honour and ambitious hope, and who therefore do not want ſuch an incitement to deſperation, enjoy a luxury ſcarce to be reconciled with the confuſion of ſuch an unſettled ſtate.—But to return.

The remainder of that, and all the next day, was taken up in making preparations for landing the troops, which was effected under cover of the night, when

when ſome were drowned in approaching an unknown ſhore in the dark, ſome killed by the enemy, and more by their own men, in the tumult and confuſion of ſuch ſcenes.

In the ſame manner was the ſiege of the town carried on, manifold more of the aſſailants falling every hour, by the inclemencies of a climate unnatural to them, and againſt which no proper proviſion had been made, though they had been delayed to meet its fierceſt fury, by diſeaſes cauſed by the badneſs of every neceſſary of life, and above all by the miſconduct of their leaders, than by all the efforts of the enemy, all the arts which the ingenuity of man could adviſe for the deſtruction of his own unhappy ſpecies.

CHAP. IX.

CHRYSAL's attention is agreeably diverted by the appearance of a young SPANIARD, *who throws himſelf at the feet of his maſter, to prefer an extraordinary requeſt. The hiſtory of* DON ALPHONSO GUZMAN, *the young* SPANIARD.

I WAS relieved from the pain of attending to ſuch ſcenes of horror, by an affair that ſhewed in a ſtriking light the force of paſſions more natural to the heart of man.

As my maſter, who was the ſoul of the enterprize, was ſtanding one night to ſee the effect of a battery which he had cauſed to be raiſed on an eminence that commanded a particular quarter of the town; for not content with performing his own duty in his proper ſtation by ſea, he literally fulfilled his promiſe to his friend,

friend, the General, and directed the operations by land also in his name; a youth, who had made his escape from the garrison, and advanced in the face of all their fire, though sufficient to terrify any being capable of terror, threw himself at his feet in agonies of distress.

My master, whose heart was warmed with that generous compassion which is inseparable from true courage, was struck at the sight, and raising him from the ground, bade him declare the nature of his distress, and expect every assistance to which he was entitled by the sacred duties of humanity.

Encouraged by these words, the youth raised his head, and fixing his eyes upon my master with a look inexpressibly supplicating, 'O stop your fire, gracious Chief,' (said he, pressing his lips passionately to the hand that had raised him, and on which he still hung) 'stop your fire in that fatal direction, where it can hurt only innocence and virtue. That building, against which it is levelled, is not a part of the fortifications, the destruction of which can be of no service to you. It is a convent, dedicated to the Virgin Mother of God, and at this time contains all that my soul holds dear, all that is beautiful and virtuous under heaven.'

Though his youth, beauty, and distress interested every one present in the suppliant's favour, the nature of his suit must necessarily have prevented his success. But an accident saved him from the pain of being refused, the powder which was to serve the guns somehow catching fire, and destroying the greatest part of the battery, in the very instant he spoke.

Not all the horrors of such a scene could suppress the

the joy he felt at an event ſo favourable to his hopes. 'Heaven has interfered!' (exclaimed he, in an extaſy) Heaven has interfered to ſave her; and man will not preſume to oppoſe its pleaſure.'

The enthuſiaſtic manner in which he ſaid this, ſtruck my maſter. 'Reſtrain your paſſions for a few moments,' (ſaid he) till I have leiſure to attend more particularly to you; and then if you can convince me of the truth of what you ſay, your requeſt ſhall be complied with. Far be it from me to hurt thoſe hapleſs votaries of religion. Britons ſeek other objects of their valour.'—He then gave the neceſſary orders for repairing the battery, and deſiring the youth to follow him, went on board his ſhip, where he treated him with every mark of politeneſs and compaſſion.

As ſoon as they had taken ſome refreſhment, my maſter made a ſign to every one elſe to retire, and addreſſing himſelf to the youth in the moſt humane manner, deſired to know who he was, and what motives could have induced him to run into ſuch imminent danger, in order to prefer a ſuit, of the ſucceſs of which there was ſo little probability.

The youth for ſome moments hung down his head, abaſhed, then with a ſigh that ſeemed to burſt his heart, 'It is my duty, moſt generous Chief,' (ſaid he) 'to give you the information you require, however painful the taſk may be to me; eſpecially as your condeſcending to liſten to the ſtory of my misfortunes awakes an hope, that you will be moved by them to grant a requeſt on which depends my life.

'My name is Alphonſo. My father, Don Pedro, bears an honourable command in the forces which defend yonder city againſt your arms, but glories more in the

the honour of being deſcended from the noble family of Guzman, which has preſerved its blood pure from every debaſing mixture, ſince the beginning of time in the mountains of Caſtile, and produced a race of heroes, whoſe fame has filled the world.

'When my father arrived at an age fit to bear arms, as none of the powers of Europe dare to provoke the wrath of Spain, diſdaining a life of inglorious peace, he entered into the forces ſent hither to reduce ſuch of the rebellious natives, as ſtill preſumed to refuſe ſubmiſſion to the monarch of the Spaniſh worlds, where he ſignalized himſelf ſo eminently, that at the end of ſeven years his merits were rewarded with a commiſſion, ſigned by the Viceroy himſelf in the name of the King.

'Such a diſtinguiſhed honour gave weight to the addreſſes which he had for ſome time paid to the only daughter of Don Alonzo Garcias, who was a native of Arragon, and had been ſent over by the king to fill the important office of Secretary to the receiver of his revenues.

'From this marriage, ſo honourable to both parties, I have the happineſs to derive my birth, if it can be called an happineſs to be born only to misfortunes.

'As I was the ſole hope of two ſuch illuſtrious houſes, no pains were ſpared to give me an education ſuitable to my birth; the great exploits of my anceſtors, the antiquity, and untainted nobility of my blood, were continually repeated to me to excite emulation, and inſpire me with proper ſentiments of honour. Such care ſeemed the ſureſt means to procure happineſs, but the wiſdom of man ſtrives in vain againſt the decrees of fate.

'In the neighbourhood of my father's houſe, there lived a merchant named Don Antonio, between whoſe family and ours there was the cloſeſt intimacy; an intimacy mutually advantageous, the countenance of a perſon of my father's conſequence being an honour to his friend, who never omitted thoſe returns of gratitude, which his wealth often gave him an opportunity of making.

'Don Antonio had an only daughter, whoſe being heireſs to his great fortune was the leaſt bleſſing heaven had beſtowed upon her: O! my Olivia, ſhall I ever behold you more? May I yet raiſe my hopes ſo high as to think of calling you mine?'——

At theſe words a flood of tears choaked his utterance, my maſter took the opportunity to go out, and give ſome orders to his officers; and on his return, the youth proceeded.

'Don Antonio's daughter and I being nearly of the ſame age, the tender connection of infant fondneſs grew up between us, and improved with our ripening years. The attention of my father was too much engroſſed by his military cares to take notice of our attachment, and my mother was ſo ſenſible of the many perfections of Olivia, that far from diſcouraging, ſhe promoted it by every means in her power, dwelling continually on her praiſes, and ſuggeſting to me ſuch little offices of affection and reſpect as were ſuited to our ages, and moſt likely to make an impreſſion on her tender heart.

'Nor did the father of Olivia (ſhe had loſt her mother in her infancy) ſhew any diſſatisfaction at a paſſion which could not eſcape his notice; influenced moſt probably by a ſenſe of the honour which he ſhould derive from ſuch an alliance.

'In this happy ſtate we lived till I entered on my fifteenth year, when my father thought it proper for me to learn the art of war, in order to qualify me for ſuch military promotions as I was entitled to by my birth; and for that purpoſe gave me notice to prepare myſelf to march with ſome troops, which were going to reinforce a garriſon in the moſt diſtant part of the kingdom.

'Though my heart glow'd with all the ambition and deſire of glory, which my noble blood muſt naturally inſpire, the thought of being ſeparated from Olivia overbalanced every other conſideration. In the firſt emotions of my ſoul therefore, I threw myſelf at my father's feet, and raſhly own'd my paſſion, imploring him as he regarded my life to make me happy in the poſſeſſion of my love before he attempted parting us, even for a moment.

'It is impoſſible to deſcribe his rage on this unhappy diſcovery. Spurning me from him with his foot, Degenerate wretch! (ſaid he, when his wrath permitted him to ſpeak) 'Degenerate wretch, to ſtain the honour of your blood by thinking of an alliance with the daughter of a perſon, of whoſe family you have no knowledge!'—' (For in all the intercourſe of intimacy the father of Olivia had never diſcovered in what part of Spain he had been born; nor could the recital of illuſtrious pedigrees, the conſtant topic of diſcourſe among the noble, ever incite him to an emulative mention of his own.)—— Hence! Fly my ſight this moment; nor ever preſume to appear before me again, till you have conquered this diſgraceful paſſion.'

'I knew the inflexibility of my father's temper too well to attempt making any reply, even would the full-

neſs

neſs of my heart have permitted me. I retired therefore without ſpeaking a word, and going to my mother, informed her of my diſtreſs, which ſhe ſtrove to alleviate by every expreſſion of tenderneſs and conſolation, promiſing to exert all her influence, as ſoon as the firſt heat of his wrath ſhould be allayed, to prevail upon him to conſent to my ſuit.

CHAP. X.

Continued: Olivia's father is taken up by the Inquiſition, and herſelf put into a convent, on an English battery's firing; upon which, Don Alphonso comes in deſpair to Chrysal's maſter to make a very odd requeſt, which he grants at length, and alſo promiſes him his aſſiſtance to obtain his miſtreſs.

'THOUGH I received ſome encouragement from theſe aſſurances, I could not forbear going in the boding of my heart, to acquaint Olivia with what had happened, but in the moſt delicate terms. Her affliction was not leſs than mine. She ſaw the ſincerity of my love, and in the tenderneſs of ſuch a ſcene yielded to my entreaties, and plighted her faith to me by the moſt ſacred vows.

'Comforted by the thought that ſhe could not now be torn from me, I returned home, where I found my mother fulfilling her promiſe, and pleading with my father in my behalf. As their earneſtneſs made them ſpeak aloud, I could not reſiſt the natural deſire of liſtening to a debate of ſuch importance to my hopes. She urged, with all the ſtrength of reaſon, the abſurdity

of thinking a family dishonoured by the admission of a female, and enforced her arguments with the examples even of sovereigns; she insisted on the beauty, virtues, and fortune of Olivia, which made her worthy of the most honourable alliance; and concluded with saying how much better it would be for us all, to have me married to a person, whose wealth would enable us to spend the remainder of our lives in plenty and happiness, than to continue struggling with every misery of poverty, merely to indulge a false ill-grounded pride.

'My father had listened to the former part of what she said with an appearance of attention, but the moment she mentioned his poverty, he lost all patience. Forbear, mean mercenary woman!' (said he, stamping his foot upon the ground with a violence that shook the house) 'Forbear to tempt my wrath by such base insinuations. Did ever a Castilian think poverty an hardship, or put riches in competition with his honour? Such sentiments may suit an Arragonian, but are beneath me. I see the source of the wretch's degeneracy! My blood never could have stooped to such meanness, had it not been mixed with yours.'——

'Saying this, he flung out of the room, and finding me at the door, mark me, thou disgrace to my blood!' (said he with a look that appalled my soul) 'If ever I hear more of this affair, I swear by the offended honour of all my ancestors, to sacrifice every one concerned in my being offered such an affront.

'What I felt at hearing this dreadful denunciation may be easily conceived. I swooned away, nor recovered my senses till several hours after, when I found my mother weeping over me, in the bitterness of resentment and grief.

'As

'As ſoon as ſhe perceived that I was come to myſelf, ſhe ſtrove to comfort me, by repeating her former promiſes, to the accompliſhment of which ſhe was now farther impelled by her reſentment of the reflections which my father had thrown upon her country.

'But an unforeſeen misfortune blaſted all our hopes before ſhe had time to make another effort.

'The father of Olivia having had occaſion to go to England on ſome affairs in the courſe of his extenſive dealings, was ſo taken with the people of that country, that after his return he never omitted any opportunity of vindicating them from the injurious aſperſions of thoſe who ſpoke only from prejudice, and without proper information.

'This attachment naturally raiſed the jealouſy of the clergy; but as he confined his approbation merely to their moral and ſocial virtues, without ever ſaying a word in vindication of their religious tenets, they contented themſelves with cautioning him againſt miſplacing his praiſe, and telling him, that there could be no virtue where the true faith was not; and therefore thoſe actions, with which he was dazzled, were no more than ſhining ſins: and they were thus mild in their reprehenſion, as he was remarkably punctual in the profeſſion and practice of all the rites and doctrines preſcribed by the holy church.

'But this lenity laſted not long. On the breaking out of the preſent war with England, ſome perſons who envied the ſucceſs with which his honeſt induſtry had been rewarded, raiſed a ſuſpicion in the governor of his holding an improper correſpondence with the enemy, to which his former regard for them ſeemed to give an appearance of probability.

'Bold in conſcious innocence he denied the charge, nor could the ſtricteſt inquiry procure the leaſt proof of it: but in the courſe of their ſearch a diſcovery was unhappily made, that involved him in ruin, if poſſible, more dreadful; a number of books containing opinions contrary to the Catholic Faith being found in his poſſeſſion concealed among ſome of his goods.

'In vain did he alledge that they belonged not to, nor could poſſibly have been known of by him, the goods among which they had been concealed having been landed but a few days before out of an Engliſh ſhip, which had been taken by a Spaniſh man of war in her paſſage to one of their own colonies, where ſuch books were openly allowed of, and ſold to him unopened, as they ſtill remained.

'But evident as the truth of this was, the Holy Office, to whoſe juriſdiction the affair belonged, would not admit of any ſuch excuſe. They inſtantly ſeized the unhappy man, and hurrying him away to their own priſon, took poſſeſſion of all his wealth, and forced his helpleſs daughter into yonder convent.

'This misfortune which deprived me of the wretch's pooreſt conſolation, the liberty of complaining, drove me to deſpair. I pined in ſilence; and was beginning to meditate on laying down a life that was become a burden to me, when my father calling me to him one morning, the time is come!' (ſaid he, ſmiling fiercely) 'that will prove the blood of Guzman. The evil genius of the Engliſh has prompted them to come, and ſeek their deaths here. The moſt noble Governor has not only promoted me this day to the command of a company in the forces deſtined for the defence of this city, but alſo, in reſpect to my family, has appointed you to be

be my lieutenant. Let this arouze you to a ſenſe of yourſelf! Conſider what you owe to your country, and to your name! Every feebler paſſion flies at the manly voice of war.'

'Languid as my ſoul was, I could not hear this news without joy, eſpecially as it opened me a proſpect of meeting honourably that death, which was now my only hope. Accordingly, as ſoon as the enemy appeared, I courted danger with ſuch eagerneſs, that my father in ſpite of all his magnanimity more than once deſired me to reſtrain a courage that aroſe to an exceſs.

'But even death itſelf is deaf to the wretch's call. Nothing material happened to me, till the battery, to which I came to you, opened upon the convent, when the thought of my Olivia's danger of being buried in its ruins drove me to madneſs. I inſtantly flew thither, and imagined that ſuch circumſtances bore down all regard to rules calculated for times of peace, demanded entrance to convey the inhabitants to ſome place of ſafety: But what was my aſtoniſhment to hear, the Governor had given the ſtricteſt orders that not a ſoul ſhould be admitted to ſtir, committing to the immediate hand of Heaven the protection of its peculiar votaries.

'Such inhumanity, for I can call it by no milder name, broke every bond of duty and allegiance. I abjured all farther connection with ſo cruelly inſenſible a monſter; and recollecting the many exalted inſtances of true generoſity which the unhappy father of Olivia had told me of the Engliſh, I reſolved to apply myſelf to them, and try whether I could not obtain that ſafety for the beloved of my ſoul, which I could not hope from him, whoſe duty it was to protect her.

'This,

'This, moſt illuſtrious Chief, is the ſtory of my miſfortunes; the cauſe of that conduct which appeared ſo ſtrange to you. If you grant my ſuit, you will be amply rewarded by the conſcious approbation of your own mind. You will merit the bleſſing of Heaven on your undertakings, by ſparing the moſt perfect of its works! And may I preſume to add! You will attach to you an heart that is incapable of deceit! Through every viciſſitude of life will I attend your ſteps, the faithful ſervant of your fate'

The brightneſs of truth breaks through every cloud, and forces conviction. 'I grant your requeſt;' (ſaid my maſter, with a ſmile of conſolation and encouragement) 'The convent ſhall be ſpared. Nor is that all. If ſucceſs crowns my hopes, I will alſo uſe every means in my power to reſtore your Olivia to your arms.'

The joy which the youth felt on hearing theſe words, is not to be deſcribed. 'O generous Engliſhman!' (ſaid he throwing himſelf at my maſter's feet once more, and kiſſing them in rapture) 'You muſt ſucceed! Heaven will proſper every enterprize conducted with ſuch virtue.'

CHAP.

CHAP. XI.

The fortunate effect of CHRYSAL'S *maſter's ſparing the convent. The mutual advantages to victors and vanquiſhed, of articles of capitulation. The only buſineſs of a general.* CHRYSAL'S *maſter performs his promiſe to* ALPHONSO, *into whoſe ſervice* CHRYSAL *enters.* ALPHONSO *recovers his miſtreſs, whoſe father is ſet at liberty by a piece of* FUN *of ſome* ENGLISH *ſailors. Concluſion of the ſtory of* ALPHONSO. CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.*

ACCORDING to his promiſe, the next night the battery was repaired, my maſter gave orders to direct the fire another way, where he ſoon found the reward of his generoſity, one of the firſt bombs which was thrown, ſetting fire to the principal magazine in the whole city, the blowing up of which overturned a conſiderable part of the fortifications.

Animated by this ſucceſs to a degree of phrenzy, the beſiegers puſhed on their attacks with ſuch irreſiſtible fury, under the directions of my maſter, (whoſe impetuoſity bore down all obſtacles, and made amends, though at a dear expence of blood, as well for his own ignorance in a ſpecies of war foreign to that which he had been bred, as for that of thoſe whoſe particular buſineſs it was) that in ſpite of the accummulated havock of war, and diſeaſe of want, and blunders worſe than all, they at length overcame the obſtinacy of the beſieged, and compelled them to propoſe delivering up the city on terms, the eſtabliſhing of which was readily agreed to, as they ſaved the plunder from the ſoldiers

of

of the victorious commanders; at the ſame time that they protected the perſons of the vanquiſhed from licentious outrage.

The moment the garriſon offered to capitulate, my maſter flew with the news to his friend the General, and embracing him in a tranſport of joy, 'At length (ſaid he) the moment is come, that makes our fortunes for ever. The city is our own. Go, and exert the plenitude of your authority, in making ſuch terms as ſhall enable us to ſupport the dignity of our birth and rank, without being any longer obliged to languiſh in ſlaviſh dependence on miniſterial favour.'

'That I will! (anſwered the General) that I will, my deareſt friend! Doubt not my acquitting myſelf properly for the pleaſing taſk! I have been long prepared for it. It was the ſole motive for my ſoliciting the command; nor has any thing elſe entered into my thoughts ſince I obtained it, but making terms, and dividing the ſpoil; that is deviſing how to ſwell our own ſhares upon the diviſion. I have calculated every thing to the greateſt nicety, and will ſhew you ſuch ſtrokes as ſhall ſurprize you. The only buſineſs of a General is to calculate contributions, and divide plunder.'

Though my maſter was ſufficiently eager to acquire wealth, he could not approve of the profeſſion of ſuch ſentiments. He haſted away therefore, without making any reply, to the place of action, to be ready in caſe of any accident, never thinking he had done any thing, while any thing remained for him to do.

Much as ſuch ſcenes engroſſed his attention, he did not forget his promiſe to the Spaniſh youth, but ordering him a guard of ſoldiers, bade him go, as ſoon as the gates ſhould be delivered up, and ſecure the convent where

where his Olivia was confined, from any accident which might happen on ſuch an occaſion in ſpite of all their care; gave him at the ſame time a purſe of gold, in which I was, to anſwer any preſent neceſſities, with directions to apply to him again, if he ſhould have any farther need of his aſſiſtance.

My new maſter did not want to have ſuch a commiſſion repeated. He kiſſed the hand of his benefactor in a rapture of gratitude, and encouraging the guard aſſigned him with the moſt liberal promiſes, flew, the moment the gates of the city were opened, to the convent, and demanded his Olivia with the peremptory voice of a conqueror, where the ſight of the guard removed every objection, as ſhe was inſtantly delivered to him.

The meeting of theſe young lovers was moſt affecting. They flew into each other's arms, and embracing in extaſy too big for utterance, gave vent to the fulneſs of their hearts by a flood of tears.

Recovering himſelf at length, 'Come, my Olivia, (ſaid Alphonſo, taking her hand) let us leave this place. Let us go'—

'O whither (interrupted ſhe, ſtarting wildly), whither ſhall I go? I have no home;—no father to receive me.'

'My home is yours; (anſwered Alphonſo, embracing her moſt tenderly) we will go to the houſe of my father, who cannot perſiſt in his cruelty, when he is informed how ſignally Heaven has interfered in our favour, and there we will conſult on the means proper for procuring the deliverance of Antonio. I have a protector among the conquerors, the moſt generous of mankind,

mankind, who will not refuſe his aſſiſtance on ſuch an occaſion.'

Theſe words comforted Olivia with an hope, for the accompliſhment of which ſhe was indebted to another cauſe.

The way from the convent to the houſe of Alphonſo's father leading them by the priſon of the Inquiſition, Olivia was ſo affected at the ſight of it, that ſhe ſwooned away in the arms of Alphonſo. Such an accident naturally threw the whole company into an embarraſſment: while they were in the midſt of which, a body of Engliſh ſeamen, who had ſlipt away from their officers, and were roving about merely from curioſity, and without intention of doing miſchief, but ready to join any that ſhould fall in their way, happening to come by, no ſooner underſtood from the guard what was the matter, than looking at each other for ſome moments, as if waiting for the word of command, at length one of them cried out, 'Hallo, boys! What ſay you? Shall we bail the gentlewoman's father? Maybap there may be ſome of our countrymen in the bilboes along with him! Damn my eyes and limbs, but it would be good fun to ſet them all free! I fancy the Inquiſitors will not refuſe our bail; if they do, I ſhould be glad to pick a quarrel with them; I hate them mortally ever ſince I ſaw them roaſt ſome poor Smouches at Liſbon, becauſe they would not eat pork. Come! chear away, my hearts of oak! All hands aloft, and to work.'

Theſe words were like fire given to a mine. He had ſcarce finiſhed, when the thoughtleſs creatures without more ado ran to the priſon, and while ſome of them

were forcing in the gates, the reſt mounting on each others ſhoulders climbed over the walls.

The moment Olivia, now recovered from her ſwoon, ſaw the priſon open, 'Now is the time, Alphonſo!' (ſaid ſhe) 'Now is the time to ſet my father free.'---

The hint was ſufficient. Alphonſo turned directly to the guard, perceiving by their looks that they were willing to aſſiſt him, 'I go, my love!' (ſaid he) 'But where ſhall I leave you in ſafety till I return? ſuch a place cannot be fit for your delicacy.'

'Speak not of leaving me!' (interrupted ſhe eagerly) 'I will go with you! No delicacy ſhall interfere with ſuch a duty.'---

On her ſaying this, they all entered the priſon, where the ſeamen were ſhouting, and ſkipping about like ſo many wild creatures, and ſetting all the priſoners at liberty wherever they went.

The ſecrets of this priſon-houſe are too horrid for deſcription. I ſhall therefore draw a veil over them at this time, eſpecially as another occaſion will lead me into the ſame ſcenes again, when the repreſentation will be more intereſting.

No words can convey an idea of the tenderneſs of the meeting between Olivia and her father, whom Alphonſo and ſhe readily found out. As ſoon as they had indulged the firſt tranſports of their joy, ſhe informed him briefly how much they were indebted to Alphonſo, for their preſent happineſs. Though her father was not at a loſs for the motive of ſuch generoſity, he thought it not proper to take notice of it at that time. He embraced him tenderly, and beſought heaven to reward his virtue.

'The happineſs of ſerving thoſe moſt dear to us,'

(ſaid Alphonſo, who had not the ſame command of his temper) 'is its own reward. Olivia and her father have a right to every thing in my power. But let us leave this place, the ſight of which appalls my ſoul. Let us go to the houſe of my father.'——

'Lead on, my children!' (anſwered Olivia's father) 'I follow willingly; and not without hope of reconciling my friend to our general happineſs.'

When they went out of the priſon, they found the ſailors employed in executing a piece of juſtice exactly in their character. They had rambled all through the priſon, without doing or deſigning miſchief, till they came to the chamber in which were kept the inſtruments of torture, the ſight of which incenſed them to ſuch a degree, that they inſtantly reſolved to make the Inquiſitors themſelves feel the force of them in their turn; but they, apprehenſive of what might happen, had prudently made their eſcape by a ſecret paſſage, as ſoon as the priſon had been forced. Diſappointed thus in their deſign, the ſailors took all the horrid apparatus, with the habits, enſigns, books, &c. of the office, and piling them up in the court, ſet fire to the heap, concluding the exploit with three chears for the honour of old England; after which they marched off in queſt of more fun, as unconcerned as if nothing had happened.

When Alphonſo arrived at his father's houſe, he found his mother juſt ſinking under the weight of affliction. On hearing his voice, ſhe ſtarted up, and running to him, 'O my ſon! my ſon!' (exclaimed ſhe, claſping him in her arms, and leaning her head upon his boſom) 'Heaven has heard my prayers! I am not childleſs, though I am a widow.' 'A widow!' (exclaimed

claimed Alphonſo) 'Forbid it, Heaven! O my father!'----

'Yes, Alphonſo!' (continued ſhe, raiſing her head from his boſom, which ſhe had bedew'd with her tears) 'Your father died, as he lived, with honour, fighting valiantly by the ſide of his General, in defence of his country. But what do I ſee?' (caſting her eyes upon Olivia, her father, and the guard, whom her ſurprize had prevented her taking notice of before) 'Olivia! Antonio!-----And who are theſe ſtrange men?-----But alas, I know too well!----O! my ſon, art thou then a priſoner to the enemies who ſlew thy father?----- Am I to loſe thee again, the moment thou art returned?'-----

'No, my mother:' (anſwered he) 'I am no priſoner! They are our protectors, given by the moſt generous of men, who has thus reſtored us to each other! O that my father were alive, to make our happineſs complete.'

'Since Heaven has appointed otherwiſe,' (ſaid Antonio, going up to Alphonſo's mother, who was weeping with Olivia, on whoſe neck ſhe had fallen) 'It is our duty to ſubmit to its pleaſure. The circumſtances of our lives make it improper for us to think of living any longer here. But that ſhould not diſcourage us. The virtuous find an home every where! We will remove to the dominions of the Engliſh, where I have lodged in honeſt hands fortune ſufficient to make our retreat happy. Under the protection of their laws, a man's mind is at liberty, and his wealth is ſecure. Mine was my only crime here; but I was aware of ſuch an attack, and had removed it beyond the reach of thoſe, who impiouſly made religion the pretext for depriving me of it. Were my friend Don Pedro living, I would have removed the objections which his high notions of ho-

nour made to an alliance with my family, and prevailed upon him to accompany us *.' Theſe words comforted the mother of Alphonſo, and made the lovers happy.

Every thing being thus ſettled, the guard was diſmiſſed with profeſſions of the higheſt gratitude to the generous Chief, which Antonio and Alphonſo propoſed waiting on him to pay in perſon, as ſoon as he ſhould be more at leiſure; and to reward the ſoldiers for their attendance, Alphonſo gave them the purſe of gold he had received from his benefactor, and in which I was; in the diviſion of which I fell to the lot of the ſerjeant who commanded them, who, looking upon me as an earneſt of the vaſt treaſures he was to receive as his ſhare of the ſpoil, went away with an happy heart to join his fellows, who were now in full poſſeſſion of the city.

CHAP. XII.

CHRYSAL *makes ſome ſtriking remarks on a ſtate of abſolute liberty. Diſappointment of the hopes of the conquerors, with the natural conſequences.* CHRYSAL'S *maſter going to take a taſte of the pleaſures of affluence, is ſlammed out of his treaſure by a ſutler, into whoſe ſervice* CHRYSAL *enters.*

THE conduct of man in ſuch ſcenes as this, where he thinks himſelf at liberty to follow the inſtantaneous impulſe of his own will, without apprehenſion of imme-

* The ſtory of ANTONIO followed here, but was ſo blotted and imperfect in the M S. that the Editor was obliged to omit it.

diate

diate puniſhment, ſhews the groundleſs vanity of thoſe who boaſt ſo loudly of the excellency of his nature, and deny the neceſſity of coercive laws.

It is true, no people ever abuſed this liberty leſs than the Engliſh, who ſcorn to inflict upon others that oppreſſion from which their laws protect themſelves; as on the other hand, ſlaves, on a change of fortune, always prove the moſt imperious tyrants; but ſtill the circumſtances attending even the moſt moderate exertion of it are too ſhocking for diſpaſſionate deſcription, wherefore I ſhall wave the painful taſk.

As ſoon as ſome degree of order was eſtabliſhed in the city, the victorious commanders proceeded to divide the ſpoil, a work for which they all ſhewed their capacity in the moſt remarkable manner, the pittance which they thought proper to appoint for the ſhare of each of the private men, who had literally borne the heat and burthen of the day, being a trifle beneath the acceptance of any but a beggar who wanted a morſel of bread, and not the fifty thouſandth part of what the chief commanders, who comparatively had lived in luxury, and iſſued their orders from places of ſafety, modeſtly owned to have reſerved for each of themſelves.

Nor was the caſe of the inferior officers, who executed thoſe orders, any better, their ſhares not being ſufficient to defray the extraordinary expences which they had been at, to provide for the enterprize, much leſs the extraordinary expences of living, where the indiſpenſible neceſſaries of life were ſubject to the moſt exorbitant impoſitions of an avaricious and arbitrary will; ſo that all they gained by their conqueſt was to exchange the dangers of war for the miſeries of want.

This diſappointment of the hopes which alone had

ſupported their ſpirits through hardſhips almoſt beyond the power of nature to ſupport, filled up the black liſt of the calamities which attended this enterprize, aggravating by deſpair the diſeaſes to which the climate ſubjected the victors to ſuch a degree, that their loſs, after their conqueſt, exceeded many times that which they had ſuffered in the ſiege from ſo many combin'd cauſes.

To the truth of this repreſentation, which to unexperienced ſpeculation may appear too ſeverely drawn, the wretched remains of the conquering army which returned to their exhauſted country, bore a melancholy teſtimony.----But to quit theſe diſagreeable reflections!

Such a treaſure as I was (a greater much than he had ever been poſſeſſed of before) raiſed the ſpirits of my maſter, the ſerjeant, ſo high, that he went directly to a ſutler's tent to take a taſte of the good living which he thought himſelf ſecure of, for the remainder of his days.

On his entering the tent, and aſking what entertainment he could have, the ſutler, ignorant of his wealth, anſwered with a curſe, that he had none for ſuch ſhabby fellows as he, and took him by the ſhoulder to thruſt him out. Provoked at ſuch an indignity to a perſon of his preſent conſequence, my maſter turned upon him, and pulling me out of his pocket, demanded haughtily, why he might not have what he would pay for, as well as another?

The ſight of the gold inſtantly changed the ſutler's whole behaviour. My worthy friend! (ſaid he, ſhaking the ſerjeant by the hand) 'I beg your pardon. I actually did not perceive whom I ſpoke to, I am ſo hurried about. But come along with me, and I'll make you amends. I have a nice leg of a fowl which was beſpoke for

for your colonel; but first come first served, as the saying is, so here it is for you; and here is a bottle of wine as cool as if it came but this minute from Iceland.'

My master was not proof against such an invitation. He fell to, without more ceremony, and when he had finished his feast, calling to know what he had to pay, the sutler answered, Two doubloons.

'Two doubloons?-----Two devils said the serjeant, (staring at such a demand) for a leg of an old hen, as black as Hell, and lean as Beelzebub; and a bottle of rot gut, sour cyder? No, no, friend! no such tricks for me. I am not to be flammed so neither.

'Why there it is now!' (answered the sutler, not much pleased with my master's looks) 'The moment a man grows rich, he grows covetous. I received the same for the other leg of that very fowl this moment from an ensign, who by the same token left his laced waistcoat in pawn for half the money. But I will not fall out with you for such a trifle, as I expect more of your custom; so e'en give me what you please. You can't think one doubloon too much I am sure! But you shall make it up another time.'

Such an argument could not be resisted. The serjeant threw me down upon the table with an air of grandeur, and went to consider how he should lay out to the best advantage, the treasures which he expected immediately to receive.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIII.

Character of CHRYSAL's *new maſter. The right way not to ſuffer by making miſtakes. A curious converſation between* CHRYSAL's *maſter and two perſons of conſequence lays open the ſecrets of ſome intereſting affairs. He makes up a fooliſh diſpute by a ſenſible toaſt.*

I WAS now entered into a ſervice, which opened to me ſo many various views of human folly, vice and wretchedneſs, as made the proſpect painful.

The manner in which my new maſter got me into his poſſeſſion, ſhewed his character in a light ſufficiently ſtrong. But I ſoon had the ſatisfaction of ſeeing, that with all his addreſs and impoſition, he was himſelf no more than the tool of the impoſitions of ſuperiors, who ſcarce left him the pooreſt gleanings to pick up, after all their plenteous harveſt: the juſt and conſtant fate of all ſuch wretches.

The continual hurry in which he was engaged, though he had falſely alledged it as an excuſe for his treatment of my late maſter, the ſerjeant, was really ſufficient to excuſe any inadvertency or blunder, and muſt have cauſed many in any one, whoſe ideas were not ſettled in one certain courſe, out of which it was impoſſible to divert them, of which his cuſtomers, whoſe attentions were not ſo diſtracted, might be apt to take advantage. But I ſoon found that he was in no danger of that kind, all his thoughts having ſuch an invariable bias to his own intereſt, that every miſtake naturally

ly

ly fell to that ſide, for which upon detection his hurry was a ready and probable excuſe.

The ſerjeant had ſcarce left him, when two perſons entered, one of whom I directly knew to be my old maſter, the Admiral's agent for ſecret ſervices, as I ſoon found the other to be in the ſame important ſtation with the General.

My maſter, who was not at a loſs for the occaſion of their viſit, led them into the moſt private place in the tent, and ſetting before them a bottle of his beſt, proceeded to buſineſs. 'Mr Admiral, to your good health! Mr General, my very hearty ſervice to you!' (ſaid he, filling a brimmer, and addreſſing each by the title of his maſter, as he ſhook them by the hand) 'Here is a good concluſion of the campaign to us. I was impatient for your coming, to know how I ſhould go on. Here have been ſeveral officers with me already, for credit on the ſcore of their prize-money, for the length of the ſiege, and the dearneſs of every thing has not left them a penny, nor any thing to pawn for one. I have got as many cloaths, and things of all kinds, as would ſerve to ſet up a Monmouth-ſtreet merchant. If the place had held out but a few days longer, the poor devils muſt have done duty in Buff. Hah! hah! hah!'

'And the propereſt dreſs for them:' (returned the Admiral) 'Who wants any cloaths in ſuch a climate as this? I am ſure I go naked half my time, though I keep under cover, and have nothing to do to heat me.'

'Very true!' (anſwered my maſter) 'But naked and hungry both, are not quite ſo well; and when their moveables were all gone after their money, I don't know who would have ſupplied them!'

'Then let them live on their allowance!' (ſaid the General)

General) 'They who can't afford to pay for better, ſhould be content with that;'----

'To die upon it, you ſhould ſay;' (interrupted my maſter) 'I am ſure the ſtores laid in are ſuch as no one can live upon, that has ever known what living was. For my part, I wonder the contractors were not aſhamed to ſupply ſuch wretched ſtuff of all kinds. They muſt have no conſcience at all, who can do ſuch things.'----

'Conſcience! hah! hah! hah! who ever heard a ſutler ſpeak of conſcience before!' (ſaid the Admiral) 'And pray, my conſcientious friend, what do you charge a bottle for this moſt excellent wine of yours?--- 'For this wine?' (anſwered my maſter, palating it two or three times) 'I charge for this wine only a piſtole; and let me tell you, that is not ſo much, conſidering every thing. This Burgundy coſt me five ſhillings a bottle, prime coſt; and when you compute every expence, you'll find that my profit is nothing extraordinary; nothing at all in compariſon of what others get.'

'No! to be ſure, replied the General, your conſcience won't ſuffer you to do as they do! you are too good a man.'----

'Too good a Chriſtian you ſhould ſay; (interrupted the Admiral) as appears by your baptizing your wine ſo piouſly! hah! hah! hah! Pray what did the water coſt, that is mixed with this ſame Burgundy? I hope that did not ſtand you in five ſhillings a bottle too? Hah! hah! hah!'---

'It is very well, gentlemen!' (returned my maſter with a ſneer) 'You are pleaſed to be merry. But if I had not ſome way to make out matters, I could never pay the exorbitant taxes which are ſqueezed from me, by

by ſome people whom I ſhan't name. And ſo here's my ſervice to you both once more! When you lower your compoſition, I'll leſſen the quantity of water, and mend mine. Hah! hah! hah!'—

'And ſo you had need, (ſaid the General) to make it drinkable: As it is, I wonder it does not poiſon every one that taſtes it. When I lived at the Shakeſpear, we did not give worſe than this to our company after they were dead drunk!'

'Worſe than this! (added the Admiral) If you had given me half ſo bad, I ſhould have broken your head with the bottle.'

'Broken my head! (returned the General) fine words truly! When you were a blue-noſed journeyman Barber, and uſed to come to me to beg broken victuals, and bottoms of bottles, you ſpoke in another tone.'—

'And when I was, Sir, (replied the Admiral) I had a good trade, and never looked upon myſelf as upon a level with the pimp of a tavern.'—

'And yet that pimping made you what you are now!' (retorted the General, riſing up in a paſſion) 'You forget perhaps how you begged of me to introduce your ſiſter to the Admiral, by which means you got into his ſervice! This is a fine return indeed.'—

'And you forget too,' (ſaid the Admiral ſtarting from his ſeat, and catching at the bottle) 'That it was that ſame ſiſter of mine, who got you into the General's ſervice, if you go to that; ſo that I think the obligation is equal.'—

'Gentlemen! dear gentlemen! interrupted my maſter, (clapping an hand to each of their collars) conſider what you are doing! What will the world ſay of ſuch a quarrel

a quarrel between gentlemen, who ought to agree like brothers. For ſhame! every body will laugh at you! Come! ſit down, and be good friends, and I'll try if I have not one bottle of better wine, over which we'll make up all matters.'——Then bringing it, and filling his glaſs, 'Come gentlemen,' (continued he, ſhaking each of them by the hand) 'I'll give you a toaſt that ſhall drown all animoſity: Here is proſperity to pimping! it is the beſt trade going, and has made us all! and is practiſed too by people in every ſtation, however they may affect to turn up their noſes at it. So let us attend to our buſineſs, and not fall together by the ears for nothing, like a parcel of dogs about a bare bone. It ſignifies nothing what we have been; if we mind our hits now, we ſhall all be gentlemen as good as the beſt of them; and as well reſpected too.'

The admiral and general ſaw the force of what he ſaid, and pledging his toaſt, ſhook hands, and were as good friends as ever.

CHAP. XIV.

Continued. The myſteries of agency; and convenience of a military government, with ſome curious notions of the genteeleſt ways of riſing in life.

'WELL, gentlemen,' (ſaid my maſter, who was not pleaſed at their jeſts upon his liquor, becauſe he could not deny the truth of them) 'I hope that wine pleaſes you!

'Aye!' (anſwered the Admiral) 'this is the right ſort! this is the thing. Give us this; and keep the

other for officers, and ſuch as are not uſed to better.'——

'And if it poiſons them (added the Admiral) the public will have the fewer to pay. Now they have done the buſineſs, let them live or die as they can, we care not. That's nothing to us.'

'Very true!' (ſaid my maſter) 'All we have to do is to make the moſt of them, while they do live; and therefore I ſhould be glad to know, as I ſaid before, how far I may venture to go with them, on the credit of their prize-money; for as the place was ſaved from being plundered, by the articles of capitulation, they muſt all get money on their ſhares, whether they will or not; their neceſſities are ſuch.'

'So much the better for us who can buy their ſhares: (anſwered the Admiral) they'll give the better bargains. Their neceſſity is our gain.'——

'Aye?' (replied my maſter) 'But I don't find they intend ſelling. All they propoſe is to mortgage.'——

'Then let them ſee who'll give them money:' (ſaid the General) 'No! no! no mortgages for us. An abſolute ſale, or nothing. We'll have no after reckonings; no over-haling accounts. As to their being unwilling to ſell, we'll manage that matter with them. When you have got them ſufficiently in your books, call for your money, and as it will be impoſſible for them to pay, apply to the commander in chief, who will oblige them to do you juſtice.'

'Why! to be ſure, that muſt do!' (anſwered my maſter) 'But how far am I to truſt them?'——

'This will ſhew you! (replied the General) Here is the rate of all their ſhares. Look at the ſum total. What noble fortunes that would have made for half a

dozen reaſonable men. It went to my heart to fritter away among ſo many.'----

'This! this is the rate of their ſhares! (ſaid my maſter, not able to conceal his aſtoniſhment, when he looked at the paper which the other gave him) Is it poſſible that this ſhould be all?'----

'Yes! (returned the Admiral) and too much for them too. More than moſt of them ever had before, or will make a good uſe of now.'----

'Why they'll mutiny, and cut all our throats!' (returned my maſter) 'There are ſeveral of them who owe me almoſt as much as this already. I thought they would have ten times this ſum at leaſt. They'll certainly mutiny and cut all our throats.'

'Don't you give yourſelf any trouble about their mutinying!' (ſaid the General) 'Do you mind your buſineſs, and leave us to take care of that. Their ſpirits will hardly be ſo high! if you have gone hand over head and truſted them ſo far, you muſt abide by the loſs. I thought I gave you a friendly caution about that before.

'And ſo,' (returned my maſter) 'I am not to go beyond this rate you ſay?'----

'Not a penny!' (anſwered the Admiral) 'That is your rule. Whatever you can beat them down of that ſhall be your own.'

'That is deducting five per cent. Agency! (interpoſed the General) and five or ten per cent. as you can make your bargain, for prompt-payment; for we will not appear to have any hand in the affair, farther than paying you the money. It muſt not be known that we are concerned in the leaſt.'----

'You concerned! (replied my maſter) I don't underſtand

ſtand you. Are you to be concerned with me in what I buy?'

'Not in the leaſt, (returned the Admiral) any farther than by employing you to act for us. You ſeem to miſtake the matter entirely. You are to buy the ſhares for us, according to this rate, for which we will allow you a proper agency: And that is all the concern you are to have in the affair.'----

'But I ſuppoſe,' (ſaid my maſter) 'I may buy on my own account if I pleaſe!'------

'Buy on your own account!' (interrupted the General) 'Such another word, and you ſhall neither ſell nor buy any thing here. Are not we the Commander's agents; and do you think they will ſuffer us to be interloped upon! You may be very well content with the profits of your own buſineſs, without thinking to interfere in ours.'

'I aſk your pardon, gentlemen!' (ſaid my maſter, who knew their power too well to diſpute with them) 'It was only a miſtake. I by no means preſume to interfere with you; and ſhall be proud to execute your orders, on whatever terms you think proper. I ſuppoſe though our former compoſition is to end, proviſions will now come in from every part, ſo that we can never think of keeping them up at the former prices.'

'Can't you ſo?' (anſwered the General) 'That ſhall be your own fault then; and your own loſs too, I can tell you. Let proviſions come in as they will, no one ſhall ſell an ounce here without our permiſſion, and that ſhall be on our own terms, you may be aſſured. Our hands are not tied up by laws. Ours is a military government, in which we can do what we pleaſe, with-

out being accountable to any one. So you may go on as before.'

'But, gentlemen, (replied my maſter) you ſhould conſider that the whole odium of this will fall upon me, as you do not appear in it, ſo that I ſhall loſe my character for ever.'

'Your character! Hah! hah! hah!' (interrupted the General) 'A ſutler's character! I ſhall never be able to bear the word again! Pray, my good friend, had a ſutler ever to loſe, that would not be a greater loſs to the finder? Come! here's my ſervice to you. Go on with your buſineſs, and make money, and never fear ſuffering by the loſs of your character. It is time for us to go and ſettle what taxes we ſhall lay upon the different kinds of merchandize, that ſhall be brought here. Our duties ſhall be paid, as well as thoſe of any king of them all. This is our reign; and if we do not make the moſt of it, we have no one to blame but ourſelves'

'And as rich as ſo many kings you will be;' (ſaid my maſter) 'if you can carry off things in the manner you ſay.'---

'As to our being rich! (returned the Admiral) that depends entirely upon our own management. Our principles indeed will be rich enough, which is all they care for; not what becomes of us, whom they would have do their buſineſs for nothing, or next to it. But they ſhall find themſelves miſtaken.

'Every thing muſt go through our hands; and gold in handling will ſtick to the fingers, as the ſong ſays. We ſhall feather our neſts in ſpite of them. They cannot do without us; and will hardly be fond of calling us to too ſtrict an account, for fear of our telling tales.

To

To be ſure, the great harveſt will be their's; but we will take toll.

'I don't doubt but you will, (ſaid my maſter) twice over for fear of miſtake, as the miller does. Why you'll make ſuch fortunes that you won't know what to do with yourſelves.'

'Never fear that!' (anſwered the General) we ſhall not be at a loſs. For my part I deſign to buy a borough, and puſh my fortune in parliament. That's the genteeleſt buſineſs a gentleman can follow now, and the readieſt way of advancing in life, and making a family.'----

'Now I think otherwiſe; (ſaid the Admiral) and that it is the moſt ungenteel way; ſuch dirty jobs are required for every thing a man gets, that it is beneath a gentleman to do them. My ſcheme is to buy an Iriſh Peerage at once, and then live ſplendidly, without troubling myſelf about any thing. Or if I ſhould grow tired of idleneſs, go into parliament there, and turn Patriot, and make ſpeeches for the good of my country.'

'Both your ſchemes may be very good!' (ſaid my maſter) 'but my ambition is not ſo high as either, at leaſt as yet, I will try to get a contract; and then I ſhall not fear making a fortune ſufficient to do what you propoſe, or more if I chuſe it; without being ſneered at for my folly. You may ſay what you will, but there is more to be got by a contract than by every other way; and therefore it is the genteeleſt in my opinion. How many Contractors have I ſeen buy noblemens fine houſes, and members of parliaments eſtates, with the profits of a ſingle campaign? And ſo, My

Lord, and you, moſt honourable Mr Member, I am your humble ſervant.'

'Honeſt Mr Contractor, (replied both at the ſame time) yours.'

CHAP. IV.

Affecting conſequences of carrying the foregoing ſchemes into execution; with the concluſion of the character and hiſtory of CHRYSAL'S *maſter.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.*

AS ſoon as this worthy pair had left my maſter, he ſet about his buſineſs of preying upon the neceſſities of every one who came near him, with as much keenneſs as a vulture tears a carrion, and with as little feeling, or he could never have gone through with it.

The tranſactions I now ſaw are a pain to memory. For the few firſt days after their ſucceſs, the officers, under the ſame intoxication with my late maſter, the ſerjeant, gave a looſe to every kind of extravagance, to compenſate to themſelves for the wants and hardſhips they had ſuffered. But no ſooner had they advanced near the limits preſcribed to their credit, than the whole ſcene changed.

The mention of the amount of their reſpective ſhares was like a clap of thunder burſting over their heads. Their aſtoniſhment for ſome time deprived them of their ſenſes. But when they were able to make a proper enquiry, and found the caſe to be too true, their rage broke through all bounds, and roſe almoſt to deſperation. The horrors of a jail, the cries of a ſtarving family, every aggravation of human miſery ſtared them in the

the face, and made the very thought of returning to their native country too terrible to be endured. But there was no remedy. Thoſe from whom alone it could proceed were too much intereſted to liſten to their complaints; and inſtead of preventing, permitted their authority to be proſtituted to complete their ruin, in the manner propoſed by their agents, ſo that the unhappy victims were forced to ſubmit to the trifle impoſed upon them.

The conſequence of this, as I have ſaid before, was, that to drown reflection they ſpent whatever time remained to them on concluding the bargains, which ſealed their ruin, in ſtill greater exceſſes, and ſo precipitated the diſtreſs they feared.

As for the private men, the impoſitions they ſuffered were if poſſible ſtill ſeverer, (though from their inſenſibility perhaps not ſo ſeverely felt) as the management of their affairs went through many more hands, every one of whom had a pull at them, down to the very loweſt claſs of harpies which prey upon an army, ſo that what remained to them was too trifling to be of any ſervice even to the very few, who ſtruggled with their neceſſities in order to ſave it.

I have not entered minutely into the particulars of this horrid ſcene. This ſlight ſketch will give you a general notion of it, and that is as much as any humane heart can bear. Indeed no deſcription could reach the truth. I ſhall therefore only juſt finiſh the outlines of my maſter's character, and then paſs on to the occurrences in my next ſervice.

The extortions to which he was himſelf forced to ſubmit from thoſe in authority, took off every ſhadow of ſhame (to conſcience he had long been a ſtranger) and added

added double keenneſs to his natural propenſity to extortion, by giving it what he thought the appearance of juſtice, and provoking him to wreak his reſentment upon others, for what he ſuffered himſelf from thoſe above his reach.

The opportunities for exerting his talents this way were infinite in a profeſſion that is a myſtery of iniquity too complicated to be unraveled, too black to be conceived, but upon experience, which he had acquired to the moſt conſummate degree, in the gradual progreſſion of his life. A natural ſharpneſs of genius, which ought to have been curbed not encouraged, had influenced his parents to bind him when very young to an attorney, under whom he learned, beſide other valuable qualifications, the nice diſtinction between law and juſtice, ſo as to know critically how far he could infringe upon the latter, without danger of getting within the reach of the former. But encouraged by much ſucceſs, he had at length unluckily happened to go too near theſe boundaries, and been obliged to quit that profeſſion; after ſome common ſteps of deſcent which, ſuch as bailiff's follower, knight of the poſt, and bully to a bawdy houſe, he ſtopped in that of footman to a beau, from which the neceſſary arts of prevaricating, lying, and evading diſagreeable demands, the qualifications of his former character, ſoon raiſed him to be his gentleman.

In this ſtation he added to his ſtock of accompliſhments, natural and acquired, pimping, ſervility; adulation, and an abſolute command of countenance, on the ſtrength of all which, together with ſome little money the fruits of his honeſt induſtry, on his maſter's fixing his habitation in a jail, he ſet up a tavern, where his ſecond-hand politeneſs and cringing behaviour, ſoon brought

brought him into buſineſs, that enabled him to live better than he could have any right to have expected, and would in time have procured him an independence.

The ſucceſs which would have ſatisfied a reaſonable perſon, only raiſed his ambition, and made him deſpiſe his buſineſs. Accordingly he commenced wine-merchant, as more ſuitable to a gentleman; in which profeſſion he went on, till his one-horſe chaiſe, his country-houſe and kept miſtreſs, would have brought him back to his primitive poverty, had not his knowledge of the world taught him to ſecrete from his creditors ſomething to try his hand upon in ſome other way, when he pitched upon his preſent occupation of a ſutler, in which this account of his life ſhews he was moſt eminently fitted to make a figure.

Thus qualified in himſelf, and ſupported by his employers, he proceeded making his bargains, with a ſucceſs to which it may be thought no regard to honeſty, no ſenſe of compaſſion was the leaſt impediment. He flattered, profeſſed the higheſt reſpect and attachment, and preſſed his goods upon his deſtined victims, with every inſinuating art, till he got them into his ſnare, when he directly put on all the inſolence of power, and made even ruin ſtill more wretched by the cruelty with which he drove them to it, the inſenſibility with which he treated them after. How often have I ſeen him refuſe to truſt a glaſs of what he called wine, to cool his raging thirſt, and comfort his fainting heart, the man whom but the day or two before he had cajoled into the exceſſes which drew him into that diſtreſs.

After ſome days of painful attention to ſuch ſhocking ſcenes, I had the pleaſure of being paid away to the captain of a merchant's ſhip, for ſome liquors, which he

he had the addreſs to deceive the vigilance of the ruling powers, and all their emiſſaries, and convey impoſt-free to my maſter.

CHAP. XVI.

CHRYSAL's maſter ſwallows a pill, and pleads an important cauſe without ſucceſs. A curious method of parrying one falſe oath by another, with the firſt oath taken by the maſter of a merchant-man. He ſhews another inſtance of his ſkill in ſteering clear of perjury, but without his former ſucceſs. His notion of conſcience. CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.*

THE care which I knew to be taken to detect and puniſh this kind of illicit trade, made me wonder at firſt that it ſhould even be attempted; but I ſoon found that the danger of ſuch detection, when it depends ſolely on the confeſſion of thoſe concerned, however forceful the means made uſe of to extort that confeſſion, is held at nought by a ſet of people, bred in the groſſeſt ignorance of every principle of moral virtue, or religious obligation, and hardened by long habit into contempt of whatever claſhes with their intereſt.

When I came into the poſſeſſion of my new maſter, he was going to attend the two great men, whoſe converſation with a ſutler I have juſt now related, in obedience to a ſummons ſent him the moment he entered the harbour. The reception he met with was ſuited to their importance. He was obliged to wait a conſiderable time, before they were at leiſure to ſee him; when being admitted to their preſence, and having delivered in his bill of lading, and taken his oath, that he had no private

private trade on board, nor any thing which was not contained in that account; they informed him what duties he muſt pay on every article, before he ſhould be permitted to land them.

My maſter, though he was ſufficiently apprized of this before, affected ſurprize, and attempted to expoſtulate with them on the illegality and injuſtice of ſuch a demand, alledging that the goods had been purchaſed at the higheſt prices in order to ſend a ſpeedy and effectual ſupply to the troops, who were known to want them, ſo that there could be no advance made upon them, which could defray ſuch additional duties; that his owners, not in the leaſt ſuſpecting any ſuch, had given him no power to pay them; and that many of the commodities being of a periſhable nature, muſt be damaged if not permitted to be landed directly, by which means not only the merchants would be great loſers, but alſo the troops ſuffer ſeverely for the want of common neceſſaries, which they could not otherwiſe be ſupplied with.

But all he could ſay had no effect. They did not even deign to make him any anſwer, farther than that they had authority for what they did, and expected obedience, not arguments, which they had not leiſure to liſten to.

Such a repulſe, however unjuſt in itſelf, and perſonally offenſive in the manner of it, was far from giving my maſter any concern. On the contrary, the difficulties which it threw upon the buſineſs of his owners, afforded him an opportunity of carrying on his own private trade to better advantage, which no oaths they could adviſe were able to put a ſtop to, as an inſtance or two of his conduct will ſhew.

Some

Some ſuſpicion having ariſen of his commerce with the ſutler, of which no direct proof could be obtained, he was ſummoned to appear before the tax-gatherers, to acquit himſelf by his oath of ſo heinous an offence.

The ſutler, who knew the conſequence of being convicted, and with all his knowledge of the world ſaw no poſſibility of avoiding it, gave himſelf up as ruined: But my maſter ſoon ſhewed him the convenience of a conſcience trained to ſwearing; for calling upon him the morning they were to appear at the dread tribunal, and ſeeing him ſo caſt down, 'Chear up, brother, (ſaid he) I'll bring you ſafe through this ſtrait! by the virtue and contents of this book (pulling one out of his pocket, and kiſſing it in form) I will never ſwear that you have bought any thing from me; ſo throw off that ſneaking, Tyburn look, and come along.'

Such an aſſurance naturally gave the ſutler ſome ſpirits; though he could not conceive how he meant to make it good; but a little time cleared up the myſtery, and ſhewed him the force of a Cuſtom-houſe oath.

As ſoon as the two culprits appeared before their judges, the latter aſſuming all the dignity of their office, exaggerated the charge in the ſtrongeſt colours, and adminiſtering the oath to my maſter, demanded in an authoritative tone, whether he had not ſold uncuſtomed goods to the ſutler, and to what amount? who not in the leaſt diſconcerted either by the queſtion, or the manner in which it was put, 'Why look ye, gentlemen,' (anſwered he, turning the quid in his cheek, and pulling up his breeches at the hips, with both his hands) 'as to that affair, by the virtue of my oath, if I ſhould ſwear that I ſold him any, I ſhould be for-

ſworn, and I'll always try to weather that point, if I can.'——

As there was no more than a general ſuſpicion againſt the criminals, this anſwer ſatisfied the ſagacity of their judges, and they were diſmiſſed with flying colours.

When they were alone, 'Well! (ſaid my maſter, ſhaking his friend by the hand) I told you I'd bring you off. Let that be an example to you for the future. None but fools convict themſelves; and none but greater fools expect it. I ſhould have little buſineſs in the merchant's ſervice, if I ſcrupled ſwallowing ſuch a pill as that every day of my life! No! no! they muſt be cunning if they can make an oath that will ſtick in the throat of the captain of a merchant-man, even if he can't find an opening to ſteer through, as was the caſe here. We have a ſalvo for ſuch things. The firſt oath we take as ſoon as we get into employment, is never to ſwear the truth to a Cuſtom-houſe-officer, while we live; ſo that all the oaths they give us go for nothing.'

But with all his cleverneſs, he ſometimes failed of ſucceſs. A lieutenant of a man of war happening, as he was rowing guard one night, to ſee a boat put off from our ſhip, purſued it in hopes of making ſome repriſals for all the extortions he and his brethren daily ſuffered from any one concerned in trade, as he knew it muſt be a ſmuggler.

The hope of prize made the crew of the lieutenant's boat pull with ſuch ſpirit, that they gained faſt upon the chace, which the other's ſeeing, and that it was impoſſible for them to get clear off, they threw their cargo overboard to diſappoint their purſuers of their expect-

ed booty, and then ran the boat a-ſhore to ſave themſelves from being taken, leaving her of courſe to the captors for their trouble, who towed her away in triumph.

The chief of the ſmugglers was my maſter's ſon, who in the account he gave him of the affair on his return, was proceeding to tell him the names of thoſe who had been with him, when the father ſtopping him ſhort, 'Avaſt! (ſaid he) coil up your tongue. I deſire to have no more of them. Have you a mind to make me forſwear myſelf when I go to recover my boat? For have her again you know I muſt, as I can't get another here, nor carry on any buſineſs without one.'----

Accordingly next morning he made a public enquiry after his boat, which he pretended had been ſtolen from his ſhip's ſide, and finding her in the poſſeſſion of the lieutenant, demanded to have her reſtored directly, and on his refuſal had him ſummoned before the officers of the cuſtoms, who were judges in ſuch affairs.

As he grounded his claim on her having been taken without his privity, and by perſons unknown to him, he was put to the common teſt of an oath, whether he knew who had been in her when ſhe was purſued by the captors. 'By the virtue of my oath, Gentlemen, (anſwered he, without the leaſt heſitation) I do not know one of them.'

So direct an anſwer ſatisfied the judges, who were no ways concerned in the affair; but that was not the caſe with the lieutenant: 'Hold Sir! (ſaid he to my maſter, who was ſheering off, laughing in his ſleeve) what is that you ſay?'----

'I ſay, (anſwered my maſter, nothing diſconcerted) that I don't know one of them.'----

'One of them! (returned the lieutenant, who inſtantly

ſtantly ſaw through his evaſion) but don't you know any of them though? Take care what you ſay! Perhaps I know more than you think I do!'——'Why as to that, (replied my maſter laughing) I cannot ſay ſo much. Perhaps I may know ſome of them.'

'How! (interpoſed the judge, offended at an anſwer which he thought ſhewed a ſlight to his authority) Did you not ſwear this moment that you did not know one of them.'——

'No more do I! (anſwered my maſter) there were twelve in the boat, of whom I know only eleven; and ſure in that caſe, I can ſafely ſwear I do not know one, that is the twelfth of them. Han! hah! hah!

'Take care, Sir, (replied the judge) how you attempt to trifle in this manner before us again. You know the puniſhment of perjury, if you ſhould be caught tripping.'——

'Never fear! (ſaid my maſter) I know the compaſs of my conſcience too well for that. I can ſteer as near that wind as another. Thus! thus! and no nearer is my trim. I'll never break an oath; but if I can give it the go by, at the lee-ſide thus, by a double-meaning, I hope that's no offence.'——

Then turning to the lieutenant, 'Well, Sir! (continued he) it ſeems you have carried too much ſail for me this trip! But if I meet you upon a wind again, mind your helm, or I may chance to fall aboard you. However, ſince I can't have my boat cheaper, I muſt e'en come to your terms, ſo what do you aſk for her?'——

To this propoſal the lieutenant made no objection: Setting therefore his price, 'Zounds! (ſaid my maſter)

I believe you have no conſcience at all, to aſk a man ſo much, and for his own boat!'——

At his mentioning conſcience, all preſent ſet up a loud laugh, and repeated the word.

Nothing abaſh'd at which, 'You may laugh as much as you pleaſe (continued he) but my notion of conſcience is not to aſk out of reaſon, for any thing one has to diſpoſe of; and ſo, Sir, if you have a mind to part with the boat, I'll give you half of what you aſk; and I ſhould think even that too much, but that I want her, and do not know where to get another.'

'And as I want to ſell her, and do not know where to get another purchaſer! (anſwered the lieutenant) you ſhall have her. Not that I think ſhe comes very cheap to you upon the whole neither! You have ſworn well for her at leaſt'

'As to that matter, (replied my maſter) that is my buſineſs, and not yours. Here is your money; and that is all you need care for.'—Saying this, he paid him for the boat, and then walked off, without concern or ſhame.——I here quitted his ſervice, of which I was heartily tired, and entered into that of the lieutenant.

CHAP.

CHAP. XVII.

CHRYSAL makes ſome reflections on the policy of impoſing oaths of exculpation. The proper method of preſerving the validity of oaths, with the conſequences of their being adminiſtred indiſcriminately to all perſons, and on all occaſions. An uncommon lecture from a captain of a man of war to his officers, repreſents ſome polite amuſements in an odd light.

I SEE you are ſhocked at ſuch flagrant inſtances of profligacy and bare-faced contempt of every thing moſt ſacred and important. They certainly are a reproach to human nature; but that reproach muſt not be confined to thoſe alone, who obviouſly incur it. They who from falſe principles of policy give the occaſion, againſt the conviction of reaſon and experience, are at leaſt equally guilty.

The impotency of man to reſiſt temptation is ſuch that he is taught to pray againſt it! Why then ſhould thoſe, who are entruſted with the care of directing his actions in the common intercourſe of life, lay ſnares to lead him into it, which there is no probability of his avoiding?

Appealing to the atteſtation of the Deity is moſt certainly the higheſt aſſurance poſſible to be given by any being, who has a ſenſe of his dependence on that Deity; nor ſhould ever be given but on the moſt important occaſions, and in the moſt ſolemn manner; nor accepted but from ſuch as may be preſumed to underſtand the nature of it.

In ſuch circumſtances it would never be violated. Man is not ſo deſperately abandoned as to run with his eyes open into inexplicable perdition. But when that atteſtation is given lightly, for every trifle, when it is placed in oppoſition to intereſt, and demanded from ſuch as cannot be ſuppoſed to know its conſequence, the reverence which ſhould be its guard is taken off, the violation becomes familiar, and of courſe the end, for which it is thus impiouſly and injudiciouſly proſtituted, diſappointed; and by that means the moſt ſacred aſſurance of life rendered void, the bond of ſocial confidence and ſafety broken.

The effects of this abſurd policy of making the obligations of Religion the common teſt of truth on trivial occaſions, and where intereſt is concerned, are more extenſive than is generally imagined. The immediate wants of nature engroſs the attention of the greater part of mankind too much to let them ſee the congruity of moral virtue, however evident to exerted reaſon; wherefore, the threats and promiſes of Religion were found neceſſary to enforce the practice of it: But as the accompliſhment of thoſe is placed at a diſtance, when they interfere with preſent enjoyments, their force wears off, the threats loſe their terrors, and the promiſes are ſlighted by thoſe, who look no farther than the inſtant moment; and this is the great ſource of that immorality and irreligion ſo prevalent in life, and which will never be corrected, till legiſlators make oaths leſs common, prevent their interfering with the ſwearer's own intereſt, (as in the inſtance which gave occaſion to theſe reflections) explain their nature before they are adminiſtered, and inflict inſtant puniſhment on their violation.

My

My new maſter had but juſt returned on board, when the captain received orders to go and aſſiſt the operations of the war in another part of the world. The news raiſed every one's ſpirits. The ſight of a place in which moſt of them had been guilty of exceſſes which threw them into diſtreſs, and where all had been ſo wretchedly diſappointed, was neceſſarily diſagreeable; and conſequently a removal to another, where a new object attracted their attention from ſuch reflections, and awoke new hopes, however likely to end in the ſame manner as the former gave them pleaſure.

There was a decency in the behaviour of both men and officers in this ſhip, ſo very different from what I had ſeen in others, as to ſtrike me with an agreeable ſurprize. But I was not long at a loſs for the reaſon. As ſoon as the ſhip was under ſail, the captain ſummoned all his officers into the great cabin, and after ſome general inſtructions about their duty, 'Gentlemen, (ſaid he, addreſſing himſelf to my maſter, and another, who had been but lately appointed to his ſhip) as we have never ſailed together before, I muſt deſire your attention to a few hints, which I always take the liberty to give in ſuch circumſtances.

'We are now ſhut up together in a priſon, where the unavoidable inconveniencies of our ſituation make all our care neceſſary to prevent its becoming inſupportable to us. For this reaſon, the firſt thing I recommend to you is not to game. Beſide the danger of diſagreement when the paſſions are agitated by the viciſſitudes of play, our pay is ſcarce ſufficient for our ſupport; ſo that the leaſt loſs muſt be diſtreſſing, the conſequence of which muſt be general unhappineſs, for who can ſee his companion miſerable, without ſharing in his miſery?

'There

'There is another thing, againſt which, though not commonly conſidered in this light, I muſt earneſtly caution you, as inevitably throwing a gloom over that chearfulneſs of mind, which is the greateſt happineſs of life, and to us muſt ſupply the place of every other happineſs, and this is the vice of profane curſing and ſwearing, to the reproach of our ſervice, too prevalent among us.

'There is no man, however hardened in this deteſtable habit, but knows it to be a crime, and feels a check from within every time he is guilty of it, the repetition of which ſelf accuſation ſours his temper, and him diſſatisfied with himſelf, and every perſon and thing about him. For the truth of this I appeal to unvaried experience. Who ever ſaw a man ſerenely chearful that was addicted to this vice? (I might ſay indeed to any vice, but as our ſituation precludes us from the practice of moſt others, I mention theſe only into which we may fall) for occaſional mirth is a very different thing, and too often leads into conſequences deſtructive of ſerenity of mind, eſpecially when it is raiſed by means inconſiſtent with virtue.

'I do not ſpeak of the effect which the practice of virtue has upon our reſolution. The courage of a Briton can never be doubted; but ſtill there is as much difference between that of a virtuous, and a vicious man, as of the ſame perſon when ſober, or intoxicated with liquor. The former is uniform, ſteady, and attentive to improve every advantage, or remedy any misfortune; the other boiſterous, headlong, and blinded with paſſion; for paſſion only can make a man face death, who in the cool moments of reflection is afraid

to

to die. In a word, one is the courage of a man, the other the raſhneſs of a brute.

'Againſt theſe two things therefore, gaming and ſwearing, I take the liberty to caution you, as a friend, who is ſincerely deſirous of your welfare; but there is another vice, in reſpect to which I do not think myſelf obliged to obſerve the ſame delicacy; and this is drunkenneſs, which is liable to be attended with ſuch dangerous conſequences in our ſituation in particular, for I think it unneceſſary to mention any other, that I ſhall ever exert all the authority entruſted to me to ſuppreſs it, and therefore it is but juſt for me to declare, that no officer, who is once guilty of it under my command, ſhall ever do duty under me more.

'This, gentlemen, is what I had to ſay to you. The obſervation of theſe few hints will make us happy among ourſelves, and reſpected by our men, without which it is impoſſible for us to be well obeyed by them; for heedleſs and profligate as they may appear, they are the ſevereſt critics on the conduct of their officers, and not only like people in higher ſtations, revere the virtues which they have not reſolution to imitate; but alſo actually do imitate them in a great degree.'

CHAP.

CHAP. XVIII.

The folly of a perſon's proſtituting his character to pleaſe his company, aggravated by the dangerous miſtake of ridicule for applauſe. CHRYSAL's *maſter changes place with the chaplain, and preaches him an intereſting ſermon, in which, among remarks more juſt than polite, he gives an uncommon reaſon for the particular deformity of vice in woman.*

I HAVE already taken notice of the effect which the advice and example of the captain had upon every one in the ſhip. The officers lived like a family of brother's, and the men did their duty with regularity and pleaſure; but though all paid due reſpect to what he ſaid, it was impoſſible to work ſuch an inſtantaneous reformation, but that ſome of them would now and then jeſt among themſelves upon his conduct, as from compariſon with that of others of his rank, inconſiſtent with his character; and in other reſpects indulge in the levities of diſcourſe and behaviour too general among perſons not much accuſtomed to the rules of rational converſation.

But whatever allowances the circumſtances of their education might claim for ſuch ſallies in the officers, the perſon who tranſgreſſed moſt was certainly entitled to none. This was the chaplain, who to avoid the imputation of being hypocritically ſanctified, ran into the oppoſite extreme.

The ſelfiſh vanity of man always takes pleaſure in ſeeing any perſon debaſe himſelf, by acting beneath his character,

character, eſpecially if that character is ſuch as appears to be placed in a more reſpectable point of view than their own. The officers, who in general look upon a chaplain as no better than lumber in a ſhip, and think he is placed as a kind of check upon them, were pleaſed with this proſtitution, which he, by a common miſtake of ridicule for applauſe, gave ſtill farther into, imagining they laughed with him, when in reality they laughed at him.

But my maſter beheld the matter in another light; and taking an opportunity one day, when the chaplain and he were by themſelves in the ward-room, 'I have obſerved with much concern, Sir, (ſaid he) that you are falling into an error, which I have known prove fatal to many gentlemen of your profeſſion. This is departing from your character, in order to accommodate yourſelf to what you think the humour of your company. Believe me, Sir, no man ever did ſo, who do not immediately fall into contempt with the very people, whoſe approbation he ſtrove to purchaſe at ſo dear a rate. The greateſt libertine deſpiſes a clergyman, who is a libertine; and the reaſon is plain. You are ſet apart from the reſt of mankind to perform the rites of Religion, and inculcate virtue by your precepts and example; and for this you are paid by the public, who expect that you ſhould earn your wages, by doing your duty; and look upon thoſe who do not, as no better than cheats.' This may appear an odd way of ſpeaking, but it is true nevertheleſs.

'On the other hand, where a clergyman fulfils his duty, and enforces his preaching by his practice, though he may not abſolutely reform all thoſe with whom he converſes, yet he will certainly work this good effect, that

that he will keep them in awe, and prevent their running into outrageous lengths of wickedneſs, at leaſt in his preſence. For whatever people may inconſiderately imagine, no man ever acted in character who was not reſpected; no man ever acted out of character who was not deſpiſed.

'Do but reflect a moment, in what light you yourſelf would look upon a lady, who ſhould ſpeak obſcenely, ſwear, drink and talk of fighting, and it will ſhew you the juſtice of this remark. For what makes theſe vices ſo particularly hateful in a woman, is not any thing in their nature particularly contradictory to the ſex, more than ours, but becauſe they are contrary to her character.

'I beg your pardon, Sir, for talking to you in this free manner, in reſpect to your conduct, which I am ſenſible concerns only yourſelf; but as the errors you have fallen into appear to have ariſen merely from inadvertency, and miſtake, I think it my duty to caution you againſt the danger of them, particularly in your preſent ſituation, with which I have had the opportunity of being much better acquainted than you poſſibly can be. I was in the ſervice long, very long, before you were born; and have been intimate with many chaplains, but never knew one who proſtituted his character to humour his company, who was not neglected by them when they had it in their power to have ſerved him; as, on the contrary, I have known many inſtances of thoſe who have reaped the happy fruits of a regular and virtuous conduct, by which they acquired an eſteem that proved the foundation of their fortune; and if all have not been equally ſucceſsful, their diſappointment muſt be attributed to ſome other cauſe.

'I would not by this be underſtood to adviſe you to a moroſe diſtance, and ſtiffneſs of behaviour, or aſperity of reproof, upon every occaſion. They ſeldom, if ever, do good in any ſituation; in yours they will certainly do hurt, by piquing falſe pride to act in oppoſition to them, without regard to the conſequences. An obliging temper, and uniformly decent conduct lead inſenſibly to imitation, where contradiction or direct admonition would be held impertinent. Theſe hints are ſo obvious, that they may ſeem unneceſſary; but it is want of attention to them which has made ſo many chaplains miſcarry in life, and indeed has brought the very character into diſrepute.'

The chaplain, who wanted neither natural good ſenſe, nor virtuous inclination, was ſtruck with the juſtice and force of this rebuke. He thanked my maſter in the moſt ingenious manner, and promiſed to regulate his future conduct by his advice. Such a change at firſt naturally expoſed him to the merriment of his companions; but as my maſter took his part, and ſhewed them the injuſtice of ſuch behaviour, it ſoon wore off, and he had the heart-felt ſatisfaction to find himſelf treated with friendly reſpect and confidence by thoſe, whoſe groſs familiarity had before often given him pain, as it evidently implied contempt.

CHAP. XIX.

CHRYSAL describes true compaſſion; and ſhows the general conſequence of a man's acknowledging diſtreſs with the reaſons of it. CHRYSAL's maſter is prevailed upon by the captain to tell him the cauſe of his melancholy, which is removed by an act of uncommon generoſity. CHRYSAL enters into a new ſervice.

AS the captain maintained the moſt friendly intercourſe with his officers, he ſoon obſerved that my maſter laboured under ſome heavy diſtreſs of mind. This naturally raiſed his compaſſion, and as real compaſſion never ſees diſtreſs, which it is not deſirous of alleviating, he frequently took occaſion, when they were by themſelves, to turn his diſcourſe upon ſuch ſubjects as he thought might lead him to open himſelf; but finding that modeſty, or a reſerve contracted from long acquaintance with misfortune, and obſervation that the knowledge of a man's being in diſtreſs always ſinks him in the eſteem of his companions, by cutting off their hopes of ſervice from him, and alarming their apprehenſions of his expecting aſſiſtance from them, prevented his taking the hint, he reſolved to break through forms, and aſk him directly.

Seeing him therefore one day walking the quarter deck, in a mood of deep melancholy, he called him into the great cabin, and deſiring him to ſit down, after a little general chat, 'I fear, Sir, (ſaid he) that ſomething hangs upon your ſpirits. If it is proper to be communicated, let me know what it is, and depend upon

upon every assistance in my power to make you easy. I ask not from idle or impertinent curiosity.'

'Sir, (answered my master, struck with the manner in which he spoke) I believe you above the influence of such motives, and shall therefore obey your kind commands without scruple. It is too true that I am unhappy; and I fear my unhappiness is too common. I have devoted my life to a profession in which I have served my country above forty years with fidelity; and I will take the liberty to say with some success: and now when my constitution is broken with wounds, fatigue, and change of climates, when nature calls for rest and refreshment, the only reward I have to expect is poverty, and its inseparable attendant, contempt. This, Sir, is the cause of my unhappiness; and such a cause, as I believe you will think it to be a just one.'

'Very true, Sir, (replied the captain) it is a just one; and what must affect every man of spirit, and a generous way of thinking. But you should not yield to it too far! You are still in the vigour of life; and while the war continues, should look forward with hope. Though you have been unsuccessful hitherto, fortune may prove more kind.'

'Alas, Sir, (returned my master) I have been so long cheated by hope, that I now detest it. When I came out upon this last expedition, our force made me so confident of success, and I was so well acquainted with the wealth in the place, that I unhappily gave way to hope, and ran into expences, which though far from being unnecessary, were imprudent, and threaten now to involve me in ruin, on my return home, as it has been thought proper by our superiors to rate our service in the conquest, at so low a price.'

'If that is the caſe then! (ſaid the captain) do not return till matters mend. Whenever I am ordered home, I'll take care to get you removed into another ſhip. Your ſtaying abroad on ſuch an account is not inconſiſtent with the ſtricteſt honour, as you do it with an intention truly honeſt.'

'Dear, Sir, (anſwered my maſter) that is very true; but I am precluded even from the wretched relief of a voluntary exile. I have a wife and children at home, the apprehenſion of whoſe diſtreſſes drives me to deſpair. It was to clothe and ſettle them in a little habitation, where they might enjoy the indiſpenſible neceſſaries of life with ſome degree of comfort, that I anticipated my ſucceſs, in the manner I mentioned; and now, as that ſucceſs has fallen ſo far ſhort of what I thought juſt expectation, all the former ſavings of my life (ſavings from the very neceſſities of nature) will be torn away by the rapacious hands of mercileſs creditors, to make up the deficiency in the articles bought of themſelves to diſcharge their demands, and my wretched family thrown upon the unfriendly world, without its being in my power to aſſiſt them. I muſt therefore return, and go into a jail to prevent their ſtarving in the ſtreets. What affected myſelf only, honeſt indignation enabled me to ſupport. I have ſeen boys, whoſe ignorance I deſpiſed, and men, whoſe principles I deteſted, preferred to command, while my ſervices were overlooked; but as I had not the intereſt of the former, nor the modiſh merit of the latter, I bore my fate with patience. But to have thoſe dearer to me than life expoſed to miſery is more than I can bear.'—

'Nor ſhall you bear it!' (replied the captain, who had feigned to cough to hide the ſympathetic tear that gliſtened

gliſtened in his eye), 'Nor ſhall you bear it. How much is the debt that alarms you? I will advance it for you directly; and not that only, I will take upon me to make your merit (to which I am no ſtranger) known to your ſuperiors, in ſuch a light as ſhall not fail of juſt reward.'

'O Sir! (returned my maſter, as ſoon as the fulneſs of his heart gave him utterance) How can I ſubmit to obligations, to which it is impoſſible I ſhould ever make any return?'——

'All the return I deſire (anſwered the captain) is your friendſhip. Speak! how much do you want? The Pacquet is yet in ſight. I will order a ſignal to be made for her, and give you a draught upon my agent.'——

'Good Heaven! (exclaimed my maſter) can there be ſuch virtue in man?'——

'Come! what is the ſum? (interrupted the captain, who wanted to ſhorten a converſation that began to be too affecting to him) I ſhall think you doubt my ſincerity if you heſitate to accept of my friendſhip.'——

'Such a doubt (returned my maſter, whoſe heart a guſh of tears had lightened) would be a blacker crime than ever ſtained my ſoul! No! I receive your beneficence with humble gratitude, as from the hand of Heaven, nor will mention any other return, but what muſt be made to that, till it ſhall be pleaſed to bleſs me with better ability.'

Then pulling out his pocket-book, 'Here is the account of what I owe (continued he, giving him ſome papers, and a purſe containing little more than his ſhare of the price of the ſmuggler's boat:) and here is all my worldly wealth, which is no more than an aſſign-

ment of my miſerable prize-money, and theſe few pieces of gold, thrown by fortune in my way, moſtly ſince our hands were tied up by the capitulation. For the balance I muſt be your debtor.'

'For the balance! (anſwered the captain, returning the purſe and the aſſignment) No! you ſhall be my debtor (if you call it ſo!) for the whole. It would be ſtrange friendſhip to ſtrip you of every thing you may want yourſelf.'—

'Excuſe me, Sir; (interrupted my maſter, unable to ſuppreſs the delicacy, the dignity of honour) I am not ſo low a wretch as to accept of more than I indiſpenſibly want; and that for perſons dearer to me than myſelf. If you will not permit me to make the debt as light as I can, it is impoſſible for me to receive your friendſhip, however eſſential to the happineſs of my heart. I am ſorry you ſhould have entertained ſo mean an opinion of me.'—

'I have the higheſt opinion of you! (replied the captain, who ſaw what pain he had given him) and ſpoke in the warmth of my regard, without the moſt diſtant deſign of giving you offence. But you ſhall make your own terms, on this condition though, that if you have any occaſion for money, you will apply to me with the freedom of a friend.'

To ſuch a propoſal, it was impoſſible to refuſe aſſenting. My maſter complied, and the captain taking the money, &c. from him, deſired that he would order a ſignal to be made for the Pacquet, and write his letters, while he himſelf ſhould draw a bill upon his agent.—— The ſentiments expreſſed by the captain made it a pleaſure to me to paſs into his ſervice on this occaſion.

As ſoon as the lieutenant went out, my new maſter walked

walked a turn or two about his cabin, in the exalted happineſs of conſcious virtue; and then drawing a bill for conſiderably more than the lieutenant was to pay, he deſired that he ſhould be called; and when he entered, 'I beg pardon (ſaid he) for interrupting you, but it is to deſire that you will preſent my compliments to your wife, and tell her I beg ſhe will accept of a trifling preſent from me, which I have taken the liberty to include in the bill. Come! no words! In this I will not be contradicted.'

'O Sir! (anſwered the lieutenant, catching his hand, as he reached him the bill, and kiſſing it eagerly) this is too much! My heart will burſt.'——Saying which, he went out of the cabin, in a ſilence more expreſſive of his ſoul, than all the flights of eloquence.

CHAP. XX.

Hiſtory of a lieutenant of a man of war. A compariſon between the rewards of merit, in the land and ſea-ſervices; with a remarkable inſtance of a great man's remembering an old friend. The conſequence of attempting to ſet up for a mender of manners, and of a man's not meeting an opportunity of making himſelf remarkable.

WHEN every thing was ſettled, and the Pacquet ſailed, the lieutenant deſired leave to wait upon my maſter; and as ſoon as he entered, 'I come Sir, (ſaid he) to pay you the thanks, which the fulneſs of my heart would not let me utter before. You have raiſed me to happineſs from the loweſt ſtate of deſpair.'——

'Hold, my friend! (anſwered my maſter, taking his hand,

hand, and ſqueezing it tenderly) ſpeak no more of it, I conjure you. I am abundantly overpaid for what I have done, by the pleaſure of having ſerved a man of merit; and ſhall think you repine at my happineſs in being able to purchaſe that pleaſure, if I ever hear the affair mentioned more.'

To relieve the lieutenant, whom he ſaw oppreſſed with gratitude, he then changed the converſation to another ſubject, when the lieutenant ſhewed ſo much good ſenſe and ſolid judgment, that my maſter could not forbear expreſſing his aſtoniſhment, that ſuch a man ſhould have been ſo long unpromoted in the ſervice.

'If you can have patience to hear the ſtory of my life (anſwered the lieutenant) it will ſoon explain that difficulty to you. My father was an officer in the army, who was rewarded for the loſs of a leg, and thirty years ſervice, with the half-pay of a captain of foot. As he had a wife and children to maintain and provide for, he retired to a cheap county, where he lived in the moſt rigid œconomy in hopes of ſaving, for he could not make any thing, being precluded from every kind of induſtry, by the profeſſion to which he had devoted his youth.

'The firſt acquaintance a ſtranger gets in a country place is the parſon of the pariſh. It was my father's happineſs to fix his habitation, where there was a clergyman who would have been a valuable acquaintance in any place, and who was equally happy in the acquiſition of a rational acquaintance in him. The common intercourſe of neighbourhood was therefore ſoon improved between them into the ſtrongeſt friendſhip, in the intimacy of which, as my father would often naturally mention

mention his anxiety for his children, his friend perſuaded him to breed me, the eldeſt, to the ſea-ſervice, in which he thought he himſelf might be able to ſerve me, by his intereſt with ſeveral commanders, with whom he had been acquainted formerly, when chaplain to a man of war. That is the ſervice! (would the good man ſay, with pleaſure ſparkling in his eyes) That is the ſervice in which merit is never diſregarded. You would not have been laid aſide after thirty years, to pine upon five ſhillings a day, if you had been bred to the ſea. No, no, merit is all that is neceſſary there.

'Such an argument was too flattering to my father's hopes to be reſiſted. Though he felt the evil of not having been bred to buſineſs himſelf, he was charmed at the thought of his ſon's being placed in the way of riſing to an higher ſphere, and readily aſſented to the advice of his friend, who not content with mere advice, inſiſted on taking me home with him, and giving me ſuch an education as ſhould qualify me to make a figure in the profeſſion to which he had directed me.'

'If ever a man of merit in the ſea-ſervice (would he often ſay) fails of riſing, it is for want of having had a good education to found his hopes upon. A mere ſeaman may work a ſhip, but an Admiral ſhould be a ſcholar.'

'How well this reaſoning was founded, experience daily ſhews; though it would be ingratitude in me to arraign it, as the little taſte for letters which I acquired from his care, if it has not contributed to my advancement, has at leaſt enabled me to ſupport the ſhock of diſappointment, as well as to avoid many evils into which I have ſeen others, who had not the ſame advantage, fall.

'At ſixteen, (for he inſiſted that it was moſt wretch-

ed

ed policy to turn a boy looſe upon the world before he had come to the uſe of reaſon, and was well inſtructed in the principles of morality and religion, for the ſake of gaining a couple of years advance:) at ſixteen, I ſay, I was ſent to ſea, provided with a cheſt of books, and mathematical inſtruments, and a good ſuit of cloaths, not to diſcredit the recommendation which my beſt friend gave me to an Admiral, with whom he had been moſt intimate, when a lieutenant; and whoſe readineſs to ſerve him in any thing he would not admit a doubt of.

'On my preſenting my letter, the Admiral at firſt had forgot the name, but recollecting himſelf at length on my mentioning ſome circumſtances which I had often heard my friend dwell upon with pleaſure;' 'Very true, (ſaid he) I remember him now. He made the beſt bowl of punch of any man in the navy.'——

'This was all the notice the great man took of him, or of me on his account, except I ſhould add, that on his captain's obſerving I ſhould make a good figure on the quarter-deck, I was directly rated a midſhipman; a favour for which I ſoon found I was indebted to his caution of ſending me well dreſſed, much more than to his intereſt.

'Though I felt this diſappointment of my firſt hopes very ſeverely, on my friend's account, as well as my own, I could not think of ſhocking him with the news, but ſaying in general terms that I had been well received, reſolved to apply myſelf to my buſineſs, and try whether I could not deſerve that favour, which he had failed to procure me.

'As I had been accuſtomed to converſation very different from that of thoſe with whom alone I could now converſe,

converſe, I took every opportunity, when off duty, of running to my books. But the relief I found from this was for the preſent overbalanced by the general ridicule into which it drew me; eſpecially as I not only avoided obſcenity, ſwearing, and drinking myſelf, but had alſo been ſo imprudent as to rebuke others for them. I was immediately nick-named the parſon, and avoided by every one in the ſhip.

'I need not deſcribe to you the ſituation of a petit officer, inſulted by thoſe below him, ridiculed by his equals, and looked down upon with contempt by his ſuperiors, who forgot they ever were in his ſtation themſelves. I bore it for fifteen years, at the end of which time, having the good fortune to be ſent to London, with a preſs-gang, on purpoſe to mortify me, for I always diſliked that particular duty more than any other in the ſervice; on ſeeing an advertiſement in the news-papers, that all who were qualified by their ſtanding to be lieutenants in the navy, ſhould attend to paſs their examination, I offered myſelf without any other introduction, or intereſt, and was appointed to a ſhip.

'In this ſtation I have done my duty for five and twenty years, without reprehenſion; but as I have no corporation-intereſt to puſh me at home, none of the modern accompliſhments to recommend me to the favourites of fortune, whom I occaſionally meet in the ſervice, nor have ever had the good luck to find an opportunity of making myſelf remarkable by any action of eclat, though in itſelf no more than a ſucceſsful blunder, my uniform conduct and care have paſſed unnoticed, and I remain a lieutenant ſtill.'

The circumſtances of this ſtory affected my maſter in the ſtrongeſt manner. He took the lieutenant by the hand,

hand, and desiring him not to despair, repeated his promise of using all his interest to serve him, of the success of which he had no reason to doubt.

Nothing particular happened during our voyage. One instance though of my master's conduct in his military capacity I cannot forbear mentioning, as it shews his character in the strongest light, which was, that he never interfered in the business of his officers, but if he happened to see any thing which he disapproved, instead of interposing his authority publicly, and giving contrary orders, he always spoke privately to the officer on duty, and giving his direction under the appearance of advice, let the alteration proceed as immediately from him, by which means he spared him the pain of being found fault with before the men, and consequently lessened in their opinion.

This delicacy not only endeared him to them all, but also contributed greatly to advance the service. For as every officer knew that he should have the credit, or bear the blame of his own actions, they all exerted themselves with the utmost ardour; whereas on the contrary, where a captain is continually interfering, and leaving nothing for his officers to do, they grow careless of course, and do nothing, as they know he will arrogate to himself the merit of success; if they do not even take a malignant pleasure in any miscarriage, the blame of which they have so just an opportunity of throwing upon him.

CHAP. XXI.

An uncommon method of carrying on a war, with the danger of ſpeaking the truth too plainly, at an improper time. CHRYSAL'S *maſter meets his brother. Some account of him. He repreſents certain matters in an odd light.* CHRYSAL *enters into his ſervice. Concluſion of his character.* CHRYSAL *quits his ſervice on an uncommon occaſion, for one, from which he paſſes in the uſual courſe of buſineſs into that of the general.*

WHEN we arrived at the place of our deſtination, we found the ſhore covered with an extenſive encampment, and every thing wearing the appearance of the moſt active war.

The firſt thing my maſter did was, of courſe, to wait upon the General, whoſe operations he was ſent to aſſiſt. He met him viewing an occaſional fortification, which he had cauſed to be raiſed to train his army to the method of making regular ſieges and attacks; and marking out a piece of ground to be ſowed with vegetables, to correct the bad effects of the ſalt proviſions, which his men had lived upon in their paſſage thither, and preſerve them in health.

The account he received from my maſter of the heavy loſs ſuſtained in the expedition from which he had juſt come, gave him viſible pleaſure, as it ſeemed to ſet his own conduct, which was diametrically the reverſe of that obſerved there, in the moſt advantageous light.

'I wonder (ſaid he, looking around him with an air of conſcious exultation) how officers can reconcile it to themſelves to throw away the lives of their men in

ſuch a manner! For my part, I act upon very different principles. I take care not only to give my troops an inſight into all the various branches of the military art, but alſo to keep them in ſuch health as may enable them to reap the advantage of their experience. There is nothing ſo bad in war as precipitation. It was the cauſe of the late General's defeat and death.'—

'Yes! (interrupted an officer who ſtood near, and had hearkened to him with evident impatience) Delay is full as bad. Your troops want neither health nor experience to conquer every oppoſition they can poſſibly meet; and will accompliſh the end they were ſent upon before your cabbages are fit for them to eat, if you will but lead them againſt their enemies, and not give them time to retire with their effects into places, whither it is impoſſible for an army to purſue them; while your men waſte their time and ſpirits in the fooliſh parade of mock battles and ſieges, till they loſe their ardour by delays which can anſwer no end, but that of protracting the war, and thereby lengthening a lucrative command.'

Such an attack was quite unexpected, and ſtruck the General with equal ſurprize and indignation, as it touched him in the tendereſt part; however, diſſembling his paſſion, of which he had an abſolute command, 'I would have you know, Sir, (ſaid he) that I think it the higheſt aſſurance in you to attempt cenſuring my conduct, who are ſent merely to execute my orders. When I aſk your opinion, it will be time enough for you to give it; till then, obedience, not advice, is what I expect from you. If I did not hold it beneath me to ſhew reſentment to one ſo abſolutely ſubject to my power, you ſhould inſtantly find the effect

of

of this inſolence. But preſume not on that protection any farther, as you regard your ſafety. No man provokes me with impunity.'

'N---n---nor me!' (ſputtered the officer, whoſe temper, hot as that of the General was cool, caught fire at the ſainteſt ſhadow of offence, and flamed almoſt to madneſs, as ſoon as rage permitted him to articulate a word) 'Nor me---m---me. I ſeek no p--p---protection but my ſword, with which I will v---v---vindicate my own honour, and make good what I ſay.——Talk to m---m---me of ſafety, and im-. p--punity!'

The affair now became ſerious, theſe words ſtriking at the General's ſafety, as well as his honour, and convincing him that he muſt ſupport his dignity by a vigorous effort. 'What!' (retorted he, therefore, with a tone and air of offended authority) 'Do you menace me too? I ſuppoſe you deſign to raiſe a mutiny in the army, but I'll prevent that.'---Then turning to an officer who attended, 'Take that madman away,' (continued he) 'and put him under a guard till he recovers his reaſon. Such behaviour muſt not go unpuniſhed.' ---Then addreſſing himſelf to my maſter with an affected unconcern, as above being moved by what had happened, while the other was led away ſpeechleſs and convulſed with rage, he politely invited him to dinner, an honour, however, which my maſter declined accepting that day, as he was moſt impatient to ſee his brother, who bore a principal command in the army under the General.

The meeting of theſe brothers was truly affecting. The inſtinctive connection of nature had been indiſſolubly cemented between them by the ſacred bond of friendſhip, founded on a ſenſe of mutual virtue.

Actuated by the ſame principles, they had both devoted

voted themſelves to the profeſſion of arms, in the different ſervices of the land and ſea, as if to avoid the jealouſy of rivalſhip, each being determined to let no competitor take the lead of him in the road to honour.

Undebauched by affluence, and diſdaining to waſte his youth at home in luxury, when the cauſe of his country called for his aſſiſtance, the elder bravely came to ſeek for glory in theſe inhoſpitable wilds, with as much ardour as my maſter purſued it on his proper element, in order to earn honours which he might tranſmit to his own poſterity, equal to thoſe which his brother inherited from his illuſtrious anceſtors.

When the tender enquiries of affection were reciprocally anſwered, my maſter gratified the curioſity of his brother with a particular account of his late dearly bought ſucceſs, cloſing the black detail with ſome remarks on the different conduct of the General of this army, which were much to his advantage.

'Your reflections, my deareſt brother, (anſwered the officer) are moſt juſt, as things appear to you. But when you have had an opportunity of ſeeing farther, I fear you will find reaſon to change your ſentiments, and that the delay here proceeds at bottom from the ſame principle with the precipitation which produced ſuch terrible effects with you, and Heaven grant it produce not as bad. Intereſt is the object every where; and whether that is purſued by ſacrificing the forces in raſh and ill-conducted attempts, to gain an immediate PRIZE, or by letting them melt away in inaction, to accumulate the profits of command, makes no difference in the end.

'I would not be underſtood from this to juſtify the officer for arraigning the General's conduct, in ſo public and perſonal a manner. Such ungoverned warmth

is

is inexcuſable. Proper reſpect muſt be paid to thoſe who bear authority, or the effect of that authority ceaſes; indeed it is not to them, but to him who delegates the authority, the reſpect is paid. A General at the head of an army repreſents his ſovereign in the plenitude of his power, and to ſuffer any ſlight to be ſhewn to his delegated character, were to betray the truſt of that delegation.

'For this reaſon, I think his puniſhment was neceſſary, and therefore juſt: I wiſh I could add that it was equally ſo from the injuſtice, as from the circumſtances of the accuſation which occaſioned it; but to any one who will not ſhut his eyes, it muſt appear beyond a doubt, that his great crime was ſpeaking too much, and too plain truth; for with all our boaſted care for the preſervation of the men, their diſtreſſes are ſuch as have not left me a penny in my pocket, for I cannot ſhut my hand where my heart is opened. In ſhort, I am ſo ſick of the whole ſcene, that I have ſolicited the command of a detached party, with which I hope to ſhew that the native bravery of Britons, when led with ſpirit, requires but little experience to enable them to conquer more formidable foes, than naked ſavages, led by a few wretched Frenchmen, in a condition not much better. I ſet out to-morrow morning, and think it a particular happineſs that you have arrived time enough for me to have this interview with you.'

The reſt of their converſation is not neceſſary to be repeated, as it turned upon their own domeſtic concerns. This much only is but juſt for me to obſerve, that it ſhewed their conduct in the intercourſe and relations of private life to be as amiable, as that in their public capacities were exalted; and proved, that moral virtue is the beſt foundation for true heroiſm.

——My maſter's brother having in the courſe of their converſation intimated his having ſome preſent occaſion for money, I here entered into his ſervice.

You may judge that I remained not long in the poſſeſſion of my new maſter. His brother had no ſooner left me, than he paid me away, among a large number of my fellows, to a merchant for ſome additions, which he thought it neceſſary to make at his own expence to the proviſions made by the public for the ſupport and comfort of his men, through the fatigues and inconveniences of a campaign in an uninhabited country.

The ſentiments expreſſed by my maſter, in the effuſion of his ſoul to his brother, ſhewed his character in the juſteſt light: I ſhall therefore only add, that as he acted from principles firmly eſtabliſhed on the invariable baſis of reaſon, there was no danger of his deviating from the paths in which he ſet out.

So bright a proſpect made it a pain to me to quit his ſervice ſo ſuddenly; but I have ſince met many mortifications of the ſame kind, my ſtay being always ſhorteſt in the beſt hands.

My continuance, though from another motive, was not much longer with my next maſter, the merchant, who in the common courſe of ſoliciting permiſſion for a ſhip of his to ſail with a cargo that muſt be ruined by delay, an embargo having been laid on all the ſhipping in the place, in the unfathomable wiſdom of the ruling powers, to promote ſome unintelligible plan of ſervice, gave me to the General's clerk, from whom in the ſame courſe of buſineſs, I came into the ſervice of the General.

End of the First Book.

CHRYSAL:

OR, THE

ADVENTURES

OF A

GUINEA.

BOOK II.

CHAP. I.

CHRYSAL's maſter makes ſome characteriſtic reflections. He is ſurprized at the officer's refuſing to make up matters; and gives a particular reaſon for ſome people's riſing in the world. An extraordinary perſonage enters to him. Deſcription of him. He gives a character of the native AMERICANS; *and offers ſome intereſting remarks on the return they make to the treatment they meet with; and on the practice of forming in the cloſet, plans of operation for armies in the field Odd reaſon why the* AMERICANS *are deſirous of gold.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.*

WHEN I entered into the poſſeſſion of my new maſter, he was waiting in his tent, with the moſt

moſt anxious impatience, for the return of a perſon whom he had employed to mediate as of himſelf, between him and the officer, whoſe preſumption in daring to find fault with his meaſures he had thought proper to puniſh in the manner I juſt now mentioned.

His reflections on an affair that ſtruck ſo dangerouſly at his pride and avarice, the ruling paſſions of his heart, could not be very agreeable; but the ſight of the money gave them a more pleaſing turn. Having aſked the clerk a few queſtions in the way of buſineſs, and diſmiſſed him, he took the purſe, and weighing it in his hand, 'Aye! (ſaid he, with delight gliſtening in his eyes) this will do. This embargo was a lucky thought. Let who will complain of the hindrance it is to the buſineſs of the public, it advances mine; and that is all I care for. I came here to ſerve myſelf, and not the public; and as there is neither plunder nor contributions to be got by activity, I muſt try what I can do another way. I ſhewed my dexterity at hunting Savages in the mountains of my own country; and have no deſire to renew the chaſe here. It was neceſſary for me then to do ſomething that ſhould make me remarkable, and gain favour with thoſe who I ſaw muſt prevail in the end, and therefore I ſpared no trouble nor fatigue, neither friend nor foe, to convince them of my attachment; and in reward they have now given me this command, in conducting which I muſt uſe delay to reap the advantages of my former activity. Fabius ſaved Rome by delay; let me but make my fortune by it, and I envy him not his fame. I prefer this ſound (chinking the purſe) to the empty noiſe of public acclamation, the ſhouts of a giddy mob, who bleſs and curſe with the ſame breath, and without knowing why they

they do either. No! no! no! this is the muſic that charms my ear.'

His meditations were broken off here, by the gentleman he waited for, who informed him that the officer would come to no terms of accommodation; nor even accept of his liberty till he ſhould be acquitted by a court-martial, and have juſtice done him for the affront offered to his honour.

Such an account was far from being agreeable to my maſter, who for obvious reaſons wiſhed to have every thing go on as quietly as poſſible. After ſome pauſe, 'This is a damn'd affair, (ſaid he) but we muſt now e'en make the beſt we can of it. Who could have thought that a countryman of my own would have proved ſo refractory. We have always been remarkable for hanging well together. One and all was the word, or we could never have done ſuch great matters. If it is once found out, that we can be divided, we ſhall ſoon loſe our conſequence; and every man be reduced to the poor proſpect of depending on his own merit. However, ſince he will not accept of his liberty here, he ſhall e'en go home a priſoner, and recover it there as well as he can. I am of the right ſide; and don't fear but my friends will bring me through more than this; eſpecially as it is a national concern to us all alike. In the mean time, we muſt double our diligence to make hay while the ſun ſhines.'

The gentleman, who was in all his ſecrets, acknowledged the force of his reaſoning; and was going to communicate to him ſome new ſtrokes of management, when word was brought to my maſter that a perſon, to whom he could not properly be denied, deſired to ſee him.

There

There was ſomething in the whole appearance of this perſon that ſtruck me with the ſtrongeſt curioſity the moment I ſaw him. His ſtature, above the common ſize of man, and was form'd with the juſteſt proportion, and denoted ability to execute the moſt difficult attempts, which the determined and enterprizing ſpirit that animated his looks could urge him to. His open countenance, in which humanity and reaſon attempered reſolution, ſhewed the genuine workings of his ſoul; and his whole deportment was in the unaffected eaſe of natural liberty, above the hypocritical formality of ſtudied rules of behaviour, deviſed only to deceive.

As ſoon as he entered, 'I am come, Sir,' (ſaid he, throwing himſelf careleſsly into a chair, and cutting ſhort all that parade of ceremony, on the punctilious obſervation of which my maſter prided himſelf not a little) 'to receive your orders. It is time, I ſhould join my people, who grow impatient, as the enemy have begun to ſtir; and I never chuſe to baulk their firſt ardour: There is nothing like taking men in the humour to fight; and before they have time to conſider too much about it.'

'I deſign, Sir,' (anſwered my maſter, with a ſolemnity and affectation of politeneſs, which made the ſtrongeſt contraſt to the blunt freedom of the other) 'to call a council of war very ſoon; at which I ſhall be glad of your aſſiſtance, to form a plan of operations for the campaign. When that is done, and all proper meaſures concerted, you ſhall ſet out. Precipitation is very dangerous, and directly contrary to the principles of the regular art of war, by which I mean to proceed. The Savages ſhall find ſome difference between my conduct, and that of my predeceſſors. They ſhan't ſurpriſe

priſe me on my march; nor draw me into an ambuſh, among woods and mountains.'

'As to the art of war, Sir, (replied the other) I know no more of it, than what heaven and common ſenſe have taught me, which is to find out the enemy, and beat them as ſoon as I can, my plan for which is always directed by preſent circumſtances; nor do I know how one can be formed to effect any other way.'

'Your exploits have always been well executed: (returned my maſter, with an air and tone of importance, as deſigning to ſay ſomething that ſhould raiſe him in the opinion of the other) But you have hitherto acted rather in the low ſphere of a partiſan, than as a general. The duty of a general comprehends much more than what you mention, as you ſhall have an opportunity of learning before we take the field. I intend to go through a regular courſe of military operations to inſtruct my officers, and diſcipline the men. Your heaven-taught generals may beat the enemy; but that is the leaſt part of the care and duty of a general now a-days. The very leaſt part.'----

'And pray, Sir, how much time will this courſe of operations take up?'----

'I cannot exactly ſay; but not above a month or two, I imagine.'----

'A month or two! why, Sir, I hope we ſhall have done the moſt troubleſome part of our work by that time; or elſe I do not know what may be the conſequence. For, to be plain with you, theſe delays will never do with the uncivilized Americans, who judge of things only by common ſenſe; and cannot be made to comprehend this way of carrying on a war, by lying ſtill in a camp and doing nothing. They have formed very

very diſadvantageous notions of the delays already made; and think a man who does not advance to fight his enemy is afraid of him; and therefore, if they are not led to action directly, they will deſert; ſo that if I ſtay a month or two here at ſchool to learn a leſſon I may never have occaſion for, I muſt find other forces to put it in practice with?'—

'Cannot you deviſe any reaſon that may account for your ſtaying, to their ſatisfaction?'—

'Really, Sir, not I! I never was good at deviſing reaſons, deſtitute of truth, in my life; and have entirely forgot the practice ſince I have converſed with the Americans, who are far from being ſuch fools, as they are too generally thought to be. Though they have not the advantages of learning, they ſee by the light of natural reaſon through all the boaſted wiles of policy; and as they never mean deceit themſelves, deteſt it in others, however ſpeciouſly diſguiſed; nor ever place confidence a ſecond time, where it has been once abuſed.'—

'How! the Americans never mean deceit! Surely you muſt know better! they are the moſt perfidious deceitful Savages that burthen the earth; and it would be an advantage to the world, if the whole race of them was exterminated.'

'Such of them as converſe much with civilized Europeans, it is too true, learn many things from them, which are a diſgrace to their own Savage nature, as you call it. But I ſpeak of the general diſpoſition of the people. Treat them with candour, probity and tenderneſs, and they will return them ten fold, in all their intercourſe with you; as, on the other hand, they ſeldom fail to retort the contrary treatment with ſevere

uſury. Nor are they to be blamed. In all their dealings with the Europeans, they find themſelves impoſed upon in the groſſeſt manner; in a manner not fit to be practiſed even with brutes. Their ſenſibility is quick, and their paſſions ungoverned; perhaps ungovernable: How then can it be wondered at that they make returns in kind, whenever they find any opportunity, and become the moſt dangerous enemies? Whereas, if thoſe paſſions were attached by good treatment, they would be the moſt affectionate, ſteady, and careful friends; I ſpeak from experience. I treat them as rational creatures; and they behave as ſuch to me. I never deceive them; and they never deceive me. I do them all the good offices in my power; and they return them manifold. In ſhort, I practiſe to them the behaviour which I wiſh to meet from them, and am never diſappointed. All the evils which have been ſuffered from them have proceeded from the unhappy error of thinking ourſelves poſſeſſed of a ſuperiority over them, which nature, that is, heaven, has not given us. They are our fellow-creatures; and, in general, above our level, in the virtues which give real pre-eminence, however deſpicably we think of and injuriouſly we treat them.'—

'They are much obliged to your character of them at leaſt; whatever others may be. And pray, Sir, what is it you would have me to do, to preſerve the good opinion of theſe moſt virtuous people?'

'I preſume not, Sir, to ſay what is proper for you to do. All I deſire is, that you will diſmiſs me directly, in a capacity of making good my promiſes to my friends; and by the time you ſay you ſhall be ready to move with the army, I hope to give a good account of the enemy.'—

'That, Sir, I have no thought of. However, as you are ſo deſirous of going, I ſhall not detain you. I'll form a plan of operations for you this very day.'

'For me, Sir! I do not underſtand you. How can you know what will be proper or poſſible for me to do, at the diſtance of many hundred miles, in a country you are an utter ſtranger to. In Europe, where war, like a game of cheſs, is played, as I may ſay, entirely by art, that method of planning in the cloſet the operations of the field may do perhaps; but then it is neceſſary that each ſide ſhould play the game by the ſame rules. A body of Americans, who know nothing of the art of war but fighting, might be apt to move ſo irregularly, as to diſconcert the whole ſcheme of the game. Indeed, by what I can judge of the matter, that very method of planning the operations of a campaign is advantageous only to the general, as it prolongs the war, and conſequently the emoluments of command, by tying up his hand from availing himſelf of any unforeſeen circumſtances in his favour. Whereas, if armies were ſent only to fight, as formerly before the improvements in the art of war, the diſpute would ſoon be decided, and even the vanquiſhed better off than the victors are at preſent, whoſe riches and ſtrength are ſo exhauſted by this dilatory way of proceeding, that they are not the better for their ſucceſs. I hope, Sir, you do not take offence at the plainneſs of my ſpeech. I have ſo long been accuſtomed to converſe with Savages, who ſpeak juſt what they think, that I am become quite a ſtranger to that diſſimulation, which is called politeneſs, among civilized nations, and muſt make uſe of conveying my thoughts.'----

'Not in the leaſt, Sir! I like your free manner much.

It

It is in the character of a ſoldier. I will order every thing to be got ready for you directly; and you ſhall go as ſoon as you pleaſe; at full liberty to act as you ſee proper.'——

'I hope, Sir, I ſhall not make a bad uſe of that liberty. And pray, among the other things, do not forget to order me ſome money.'——

'Money, Sir! What occaſion can you poſſibly have for money, among Savages, who do not know the value of it?'——

'Why really, Sir, that queſtion is natural. But the matter is, the Savages who come among the Europeans ſee every thing governed by gold, in ſuch a manner, that they have taken it into their heads we worſhip it; and therefore are become as eager for it as ourſelves, in hopes of gaining an aſcendency over us, when they have got our god in their poſſeſſion.'

A conſcious heart takes to itſelf more than was ever meant. The dry manner in which this was ſaid touched my maſter to the quick, and made him not deſire to purſue the converſation any farther with ſuch a free ſpeaker, nor have ſo nice an obſerver longer about him to pry into the motives of his actions. Giving him therefore the money he required, he wiſhed him ſucceſs with a forced politeneſs, and diſmiſſed him to prepare for his departure.

It was a pleaſure to me to change my ſervice on this occaſion; as the idea I had conceived of my new maſter, both from his appearance and converſation, promiſed me ſome variety, and my curioſity was heartily forfeited with the regular art of war.

CHAP. II.

The manner in which CHRYSAL'S *master was received by his subjects. Antiquated principles on which his authority was founded. His odd opinions and conduct in some important matters, with the consequences.*

AS soon as every thing was ready my master set out for home, where he arrived without meeting any thing remarkable in his journey, as you may suppose, through uninhabited deserts.

The reception he met with from his people was the very reverse of what Sovereigns usually meet. They welcomed him with sincere joy and respect, which they expressed in the overflowing of their hearts, without ceremony or parade: I say, 'Sovereigns,' as he really enjoyed that power in its most rational sense, his will being a law to all around him, because they always found it just and advantageous to them.

Though the account which he gave my late master of his manner of treating his people shewed a just foundation for his power over them, I found that it depended not on that alone. His authority, like that of the first rulers of the heart, was founded also on the relations of nature, and supported by its strongest ties, he being literally the father of his subjects, the king of his own family.

To explain this it is necessary to inform you, that on his fixing his residence among these uncivilized nations, in order to gain an influence over them the more readily, he had laid aside all such rules of conduct as seem-

ed

ed to him to be contradictory to natural reaſon, and the public good, however forcibly enjoined for particular convenience.

Among theſe the chief was the cuſtom of reſtraining the commerce between the ſexes, and confining individuals to each other, after the deſire which firſt brought them together had ceaſed; as he ſaw that the ſtrongeſt paſſion which governs the human heart is that deſire, (for his philoſophy was not refined enough to ſuggeſt one thought of governing the paſſions) and as the continuation of the ſpecies depends entirely on the gratification of it, he held every oppoſition to it to be moſt criminal in itſelf, and detrimental to the public good, (properly the firſt object of every civil inſtitution, and which can be promoted no way ſo effectually, as by promoting population) and therefore exerted all his influence to encourage that commerce, under ſuch reſtrictions only, as were evidently neceſſary to procure the great end of it, the propagation of the ſpecies. He gave liberty to every man to converſe with as many females as he pleaſed; and to quit them whenever he thought proper, provided they were not pregnant. To the women the former liberty could not be extended, as the uſe of it would defeat the deſign; or, where it had not immediately that effect, cauſe confuſion, and prevent both paternal care, and filial duty, by the uncertainty of deſcent: But the latter inſtance they enjoyed equally with the men, being allowed to chuſe whom they liked; and if not pregnant, quit them at pleaſure, for others, without reproach or ſhame; the offſpring of all which connections were to remain with the fathers.

I ſhall not ſay whether reaſon originally ſuggeſted

this ſyſtem to him; or (as is often the caſe) whether he ſought for reaſons to ſupport the dictates of inclination. Be it which it would, the effect was the ſame. His ſubjects increaſed in an uncommon degree; and he founded, like the patriarchs of old, an authority on the juſteſt of all principles, voluntary conſent, over a people inſeparably linked to him, and to each other, by the ſtrongeſt ties of nature, as being by this complicated commerce, in the ſtricteſt ſenſe, one family; for diſdaining to make laws for others, which he would not obſerve himſelf, (like too many of his brother legiſlators) he had enforced his precepts ſo powerfully by his example, that there was ſcarce an houſe in any of the tribes around him, from which he had not taken a temporary mate, and added a child of his to their number.

That his reception, as I have obſerved, ſhould be moſt cordial from ſuch ſubjects, is not to be wondered at. They flocked about him on his arrival, and hailing him with one voice by every tender relation of nature, brother, father, ſon, huſband, ſhewed an affection too ſublime to be expreſſed by formal rules, and impoſſible to be ſeen without ſympathizing in it.

When this tribute was paid to nature, he called the elders of the people together, and diſtributing among them the preſents which he had received for that purpoſe, gave them an account of the mighty army ſent by his Sovereign againſt the enemy, and propoſed to them to aſſiſt its operations.

There required not many arguments to confirm their confidence, in one who had never deceived them. They readily and ſincerely aſſented to his propoſal, and ſending to invite all their neighbours to join them, ſeparated to make the very little preparations neceſſary for perſons who

who were ſtrangers to luxury, and knew no wants but thoſe of nature.

CHAP. III.

CHRYSAL deſcribes his maſter's habitation and family. He makes an uncommon progreſs. The manner in which he found the females of his houſhold engaged. Remarks on FINERY. *Account of their amuſements, with the manner in which they uſually ended. The method by which* CHRYSAL'S *maſter kept peace in his family.*

AS ſoon as my maſter had thus concluded the buſineſs of his public character, he retired to devote a few minutes to his domeſtic concerns.

His habitation was built on an eminence by the ſide of a rivulet, the banks of which were covered with a number of neat little cottages, inhabited by the females of his preſent family; for inſtead of attempting to prevent their quitting him for other men, as inclination led them, he not only always diſmiſſed them with preſents in the moſt friendly manner, but alſo kept up an intercourſe of regard with them and their ſucceſſive huſbands, every one of whom he attached to himſelf in the ſtrongeſt manner, being particularly ready on all occaſions to do them every good office in his power.

In theſe cottages they bred up their children, and enjoyed from his care all the neceſſaries of life with more convenience and comfort, than they could poſſibly have experienced among their own people, unimbittered by any of thoſe jealouſies and feuds which ſuch a ſituation

ſituation might ſeem to threaten, ſo equally did he diſpenſe his favours among them.

When he had given ſome orders in his houſe, he walked out to viſit his family, and enjoy the ſublimeſt inſtance of the happineſs of power, in making all who were ſubject to it happy, by the unaffected tenderneſs with which he enquired after their welfare, and returned their careſſes, on his entering every cottage.

The appearance of theſe females was moſt different from the delicate ſenſibility that ſoftened the beauties of * Amelia, or the fire which animated the charms of Olivia; but cuſtom, that reconciles all things, had made them agreeable to him, eſpecially as no compariſon could there be made to their diſadvantage; and the honeſt readineſs with which they met his addreſſes, the warmth with which they ſhared his joy, amply over-balanced any imaginary defect in feature or complexion; any ignorance of thoſe affected arts of coyneſs, which overacted often pall the taſte for long expected pleaſure.

As his women did not expect his viſit ſo ſoon, he found them engaged, according to their different inclinations, either in the management of their domeſtic œconomy, or in ſuch amuſements as cuſtom had made pleaſing to them. The occupations of the former kind were neceſſarily confined within a narrow circle, from the circumſtance of their lives; but in the latter fancy, ſole ſovereign of the ſcene, aſſerted her unbounded rule, and ſported in variety of forms, many of which I ſoon had an opportunity of ſeeing.

As my maſter proceeded in his patriarchal progreſs, he met a conſiderable number of the females of his family, with ſuch of the neighbouring men, as from age

* See Vol. I.---Chap. iv.

or

or idleneſs were unfit for more uſeful employments, aſſembled together under a ſpreading tree, that grew before the door of one of their cottages, dreſſed out in their gayeſt apparel, and engaged in different kinds of diverſions. At the ſight of him they all aroſe, and would have deſiſted, but he prevented them; and not only made them reſume their ſports, but alſo ſat down himſelf, in the midſt of the company, to be a ſpectator of them.

It ſeems it was a cuſtom among them to meet frequently thus at each others cottages, for the pleaſure of enjoying their favourite amuſements to more advantage together, and diſplaying their finery, to ſet off which, no art nor care was neglected on theſe occaſions. They dreſſed themſelves in their beſt blankets, which were covered all over with patches of various colours to make them look more gawdy. Their heads were adorned with plumes of feathers. Strings of glaſs-beads were rolled around their arms and legs. Their toes were loaded with rings of pewter and braſs; and their necks and faces were carved with figures of birds and flowers, and painted of various hues.

I ſee your laughter moved at this deſcription; but that proceeds from narrow prejudice, and want of rational reflection, on which it would appear, that all uſeleſs ornaments are equally juſt objects of ridicule, whether made of ſilks, and laces, or parti-coloured rags; whether bits of glaſs, or pearls and diamonds. Think, I ſay, but for a moment; and you will ſee, that in reality there is nothing more abſurd in wearing one kind of metal, or upon one part of the body, than another, rings of braſs, for inſtance, on the toes, than golden on the fingers; in carving the ſkin, than boring the ears;

ears; or in painting the face blue and green, than white and red. The ſame vanity is the motive of all, and all produce the ſame effect and admiration; as in things equally unſupported by reaſon, cuſtom and caprice bear equal ſway. The difference in the means therefore makes none in the end; at leaſt none to the diſadvantage of the perſons of whom I ſpeak, as it certainly is more abſurd to laviſh treaſures, that might be ſo much better employed, to a worthleſs purpoſe which cheaper bawbles would anſwer as well.

The amuſements, in which they were engaged, were as whimſical as their dreſſes. Some ſkipped about, deſcribing various figures in their motions, till want of breath and wearineſs obliged them to ſit down. Others, and theſe the greateſt number, were employed in chucking ſhells or pebbles from the brook, into holes dug in the ſand, for prizes of bits of tin, or braſs, which game they applied themſelves to with the greateſt eagerneſs and anxiety, and many were ſo expert at it, as to ſtrip their antagoniſts of all their hoards, often indeed not without the aſſiſtance of chicanery and deceit: And a few of the eldeſt, and thoſe who had nothing to ſtake at play, gathered up and down into little ſets, and entertained themſelves making remarks upon the reſt, not always dictated by good-nature or truth; while the miſtreſs of the cottage buſied herſelf in adjuſting ceremonials, ſettling her company at their ſeveral amuſements, and ſerving them with milk, or broth, and tobacco, the fatigue of which office ſhe never repined at, as her conſequence was eſtabliſhed by the number of her gueſts.

Though mere amuſement was the obvious end of theſe meetings, other objects were generally purſued, and other conſequences produced by them. Intrigues were

were commenced, and often completed; and trifling as the prizes were for which they contended, emulation and avarice agitated the paſſions, and ſet the competitors together by the ears, till they almoſt clawed out each others eyes.

Their ſports were at length beginning to take their uſual turn. The tempers of the loſers became ſoured; and the detection of ſome deep ſtrokes of play gave riſe to altercations, which would ſoon have been followed by blows; but my maſter interpoſed his authority, and put an end to their diſputes, when the party broke up; ſome retiring to keep the aſſignations they had made in the warmth of their inclinations, and the reſt to calculate their winnings, or deviſe ſchemes for retrieving their loſſes, at their next meeting; and my maſter having ſingled out the happy favourite of that night, repaired with her to his own habitation, without any of the reſt taking offence, or even particular notice of the preference, as they had it in their power to ſupply their loſs elſewhere.

I have obſerved your aſtoniſhment at this whole ſcene, eſpecially at my maſter's hardineſs in expecting to be happy among a number of women, and attempting to keep them in order together, when one, in your opinion, is more than any man can manage; but what will it be, when I tell you that that number often amounted to hundreds; and that he never had recourſe to any kind of ſeverity, in his conduct to them?

To comprehend this, it is neceſſary for you to conſider, that moſt of, if not all, the uneaſineſſes which imbitter the life of man ariſe from an officious intruſion to the uneaſineſſes of others, or an over-weening partiality to himſelf, that makes him expect treatment, which he does

does not give, and take offence where none is meant him, for matters not worth his being offended at; an observation that will hold in every ſtate public and private; among governors, as well as governed.

His rule, then was never to take part in their diſputes among themſelves, nor offence at their infidelity to his bed, of which he himſelf ſet them the example. This diſarmed them of that perverſeneſs which is the ſex's moſt offenſive weapon. They remained conſtant to him, becauſe they were not reſtrained from being otherwiſe, whenever they pleaſed; nor did they trouble him with their diſputes, becauſe they ſaw he would not be troubled at them.

CHAP. IV.

CHRYSAL's *maſter is honourably rewarded for his ſervices. An unexpected meeting with one of his country-women, introduces an uncommon remark on a common matter. The lady gives an odd inſtance of conjugal love; and refuſes the civil offer of* CHRYSAL's *maſter, for a natural reaſon.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.*

THE very next morning his people aſſembled before his door, in readineſs to obey his commands, when he led them directly in queſt of the enemy, ſharing himſelf in all their fatigues, and teaching them to deſpiſe danger by his example, ſo little did he know the duty of a general.

It would be tireſome to enter into a particular deſcription of an expedition, carried on among wilderneſſes and deſarts, and conſiſting chiefly of ambuſcades and

ſurprizes. It is ſufficient to ſay that he was ſucceſsful in all his enterprizes, reaſon and preſence of mind ſerving him inſtead of experience, in the regular art of war; and courage well ſupplying the place of diſcipline in his men.

Such ſervices could not miſs of reward, from a juſt and judicious Sovereign. His power was enlarged; and he received thoſe marks of favour and diſtinction, which were originally inſtituted to excite virtuous emulation, and ſet the ſeal of honour on ſucceſsful merit; though like moſt human inſtitutions, they too often produce the contrary effect, and reflect only diſgrace, from being beſtowed contrary to their intention, and on unworthy objects.

As he was preparing the way thus for the motions of the main army, whenever the general ſhould think proper to let it move, ſome of his people brought before him an European lady, whom they found wandering in thoſe unfrequented wilds, her guide having miſtaken his way.

Such a ſituation neceſſarily entitled her to his compaſſion and aſſiſtance; but he ſoon felt himſelf ſtill farther intereſted in her favour, when he found ſhe was a native of his own country, and of a family not entirely unknown to him, before he came to fix his abode in this diſtant part of the world.

There is not a ſtronger inſtance of the force of that attachment, called in a larger ſenſe patriotiſm, than the inſtinctive affection which perſons of the ſame country, though utterly unacquainted before, feel for each other the moment they meet in a ſtrange place. My maſter inſtantly called her his dear country-woman, and embracing her with the tenderneſs of a brother, led

her away to his own tent, which he reſigned to her, as the beſt accommodation he could give her; and then went and ordered every thing that had belonged to her, which his men looking upon as a fair prize had taken and divided among themſelves, to be reſtored, promiſing to recompenſe the captors himſelf. As ſoon as ſhe had adjuſted her appearance, in ſome better manner, ſhe ſent to deſire my maſter's company, for he had told her that he ſhould not come without permiſſion, for fear of intruding improperly upon her; and on his expreſſing wonder what could have brought her thus in the midſt of thoſe deſarts ſo far away from every European ſettlement, ſhe gratified his curioſity with the following account, which was often interrupted by ſighs, tears, and every expreſſion of the moſt poignant grief.

Her huſband, (ſhe ſaid) who had been an officer of diſtinguiſhed rank in the Engliſh forces, had fallen in one of the defeats they ſuffered in the beginning of the war, before England had exerted herſelf in ſuch a manner as to entitle her to ſucceſs; the news of whoſe death affected her ſo extraordinarily, that ſhe reſolved to brave all the fatigues and dangers of ſo long a voyage by ſea, and journey through uninhabited deſarts in time of war, for the melancholy pleaſure of one laſt view of his dear remains, which ſhe had accordingly obtained, though not ſo much to her ſatisfaction as ſhe could have wiſhed, the body being in a ſtate of putrefaction, not poſſible to be approached without diſguſt and abhorrence; nor to be diſtinguiſhed from any other maſs of corruption, when ſhe had cauſed it to be dug out of the grave, in which it had been buried on the ſpot where he had been killed, among the other victims

of the day, and was now returning home, when ſhe had happily been found by his people.

Though my maſter was as much unverſed in the regular rules of politeneſs, as of war, good-nature taught him the eſſentials of one, as reaſon had of the other. He heard out her ſtory, though not without pity and contempt at the extravagance and folly of it; and conſoling her with ſome general remarks on the error of indulging immoderate grief, for things not to be remedied, offered to ſend her under a ſufficient eſcort to his own habitation, where ſhe might remain in ſafety, and have the converſation and attendance of his women, till the concluſion of the campaign, when he would convey her himſelf to the next ſea-port, in order to her returning to her own country.

Though ſhe would have looked upon any attempt to conſole her, as the higheſt affront in another ſituation, her preſent circumſtances made her think it not proper to ſhew any reſentment of it to him; beſides there was ſomething in his appearance, that ſome how made it leſs diſagreeable from him, than it would have been from any other perſon; and would poſſibly have influenced her to accept of his offer, had not the mention of his women alarmed her delicacy, and ſet her virtue on its guard.

Reſolving therefore to have this cleared up, before ſhe would give any direct anſwer to his offer, ſhe expreſſed her high ſenſe of his kindneſs in the politeſt terms; and entering into a general converſation, among other queſtions of mere curioſity, aſked him in a careleſs manner, whom he meant by his women, and in what capacity they ſerved him?

Such a queſtion was more than he deſired, though

he had inconſiderately laid himſelf open to it. However, as he thought no delicacy could juſtify his deceit, he anſwered her directly and without preface, that they ſerved him in the natural capacity of women, while they pleaſed to continue with him; nor did he deſire any other ſervice from them.

Though ſhe was a good deal diſconcerted at this anſwer, ſhe had the addreſs not to ſeem to underſtand it, in hopes that he would take the hint, and explain himſelf into a meaning leſs offenſive to her modeſty; to give him an opportunity for which, 'I preſume, Sir, (replied ſhe) you mean that they wait upon your lady, or perform the other domeſtic offices of your family, in which women ſervants only are employed?'

'No really, madam, (anſwered he) that was not my meaning. I have no lady for them to wait upon; nor do they live ſo immediately in my own family, as to have any domeſtic employment in it.'

'How Sir! Are you not married?

'Not particularly to any one perſon, madam.'

——'That's very ſtrange! (ſaid ſhe, pleaſed at having gained ſo material a piece of intelligence, and reſolving to purſue the converſation) that is really very ſtrange. And pray, Sir, are theſe ladies Europeans? I ſuppoſe (ſighing heavily, and wiping her eyes) they are the unhappy widows of ſuch officers as have fallen in the ſervice, to whom you have ſhewn the ſame politeneſs and humanity, as I now experience from you.'

'I am ſorry, madam, (anſwered he, to ſatisfy your curioſity at once, and put a ſtop to queſtions which began to be troubleſome) to be obliged to undeceive you in an opinion ſo favourable to me; they are all native Americans, by whom I have had children; and in whoſe

whoſe unfeigned affection, and eaſy complying tempers, I find ſuch ſatisfaction, that I never ſhall quit them to attach myſelf ſolely to any one woman, however ſuperior to them in the advantages of beauty and education; not, indeed, that they want qualifications to raiſe both love and eſteem, as you will find when you have been ſome time among them.'

This, which was too plain for her to affect not to underſtand it, inſtantly put an end to the pleaſure ſhe had begun to find in his converſation, and determined her as to his propoſal. 'I am much obliged to you for your civil offer, Sir, (ſaid ſhe, bridling up her chin, and making him a formal courteſy) but I cannot accept of it. I have not the leaſt deſire for the converſation of Squaws, and am in haſte to leave this ſavage place; for which reaſon I ſhall take it as a favour, if you will ſend ſome of your people to guard me to the next Engliſh ſettlement to-morrow morning. At preſent I am quite exhauſted with fatigue, and want ſome reſt, if the diſtreſs of my heart will permit me to take any.'

This thought recalled the remembrance of her loſs: She burſt into a flood of tears; and my maſter withdrew, after finding that his attempts to conſole her only aggravated her grief, and gave offence to her delicacy.

Unverſed as he was in the ways of the polite world, he was too well acquainted with the ruling principles of the ſex, which in every ſtate are the ſame, not to ſee through this change in her behaviour; but the diſcovery had no other effect, than to confirm him in his contempt for ſuch hypocritical levity. Accordingly, finding ſhe continued in the ſame mind next morning, he made the beſt proviſion he could for her journey, and

ſent her away with a ſufficient guard, forcing upon her a purſe of gold, (in which I was) to defray any accidental expence, for which ſhe might be unprovided, in caſe ſhe ſhould not directly meet a ſhip ready to carry her to Europe.

CHAP. V.

Chrysal's miſtreſs gives ſome ſtriking inſtances of female conſiſtency. She is cured of her grief by a perſon of accompliſhments as extraordinary as her own. The advantage of comparative excellence. Chrysal's *miſtreſs marries, and he changes his ſervice for that of an old maſter.*

As ſoon as my miſtreſs found herſelf out of ſight of my late maſter, ſhe gave vent to that indignation and rage of diſappointment, which ſhe had thought proper to ſuppreſs while in his preſence. 'Inſenſible brute! (ſaid ſhe) Not quit his odious Squaws for any woman! And to have the rudeneſs to tell me ſo to my face! It ſhews his groſs, low taſte, for which ſuch animals are fitteſt.'

Then pauſing for ſome moments; 'What a charming figure! (continued ſhe, ſighing ſoftly) Such a ſize! Such ſtrength and eaſe in every motion! And then the manly beauty in his looks! Had I but the poliſhing of him! I was too haſty, I ſhould have waited to inſinuate myſelf into his heart by degrees. I could not have failed of ſucceſs. My huſband was as ſtrongly attached to another when firſt I undertook him. Oh! deareſt, beſt of men! Never ſhall I meet your fellow! Never ſhall another poſſeſs your place in this faithful, wretched heart.'——

A flood of tears here interrupted her meditations, which

which were often renewed in the ſame ſtrain during her journey, and always ended the ſame way.

On her arrival at the ſea-port, ſhe had the mortification to find that ſhe muſt wait ſome time for a paſſage home, all the ſhips which were there, having ſailed a few days before.

But her vexation at this diſappointment was conſiderably lightened by the converſation of ſeveral companions in it, particularly that of a chaplain of a regiment, who had taken ſuch offence at the immorality of the army, and the uncomfortable way of living in thoſe ſavage countries, that he had hired a ſubſtitute, at a cheap rate, to do his duty, and was returning home to enjoy a life more agreeable to the delicacy of his character and inclinations, and exert his talents to more advantage in paying court to his patrons, than in reforming ſoldiers, or converting ſavages.

Extremes are never laſting: The violence of my miſtreſs's grief had been too much for nature to ſupport, and was beginning to abate of itſelf, when my late maſter awoke another paſſion, that would ſoon have ſupplanted it; and though he did not purſue his advantage as far as he might have done, he had opened her heart, and inſpired a warmth ready to receive any other impreſſion.

As the chaplain's function, and her rank, not to omit the accompliſhments of both, ſeemed to point them to each other as the moſt proper companions, it was not ſtrange that they ſhould ſoon grow intimate, nor that their intimacy ſhould be inſenſibly improved into a tender paſſion. They made tete-a-tete parties, at games which no one elſe in the place knew how to play with them. They talked of all the places of pleaſurable

able reſort in England, and of the amuſements purſued at them: and they raiſed their own conſequence in the eyes of each other, by boaſting of acquaintances with perſons they know only by name.

Such uncommon accompliſhments were not without effect. Each took the tales of the other upon credit, becauſe their own met the ſame complaiſance; and found a pleaſure in being deceived by one whom it was an equal pleaſure to deceive.

But this was not the only thing that advanced their mutual influence upon each other. All human excellence is but comparative. Though far from being beautiful, they were the neareſt to being ſo; though far from being well-bred, they knew moſt of the common ceremonies, in which good-breeding is by many thought to conſiſt, but which really are the incumbrances of it, of any perſons there; and conſequently appeared to enjoy thoſe advantages in the higheſt degree. They regulated the aſſemblies, they laid down the rules of play, they made faſhions; in a word, their opinion was the law in every matter of polite amuſement and concern.

Thus cut out for each other, it was impoſſible for this accompliſhed pair not to come together. They were accordingly married, not more to the grief of their reſpected admirers, than the joy of their rivals; the bride forgetting her grief for a dead, in the arms of a living huſband, and the happy bridegroom pleaſing himſelf with the thought that the high accompliſhments of his lady would increaſe his intereſt with his noble patrons.

To crown their happineſs, in a few days after they were married, an Engliſh man of war put in there, in its

its way home, the captain of which politely offered them their paſſage. Such an opportunity was not to be miſſed: they accepted his offer with the greateſt joy, and in return made a party and entertainment for him, when he won me from my miſtreſs at a game of brag, the only game indeed at which he thought himſelf a match for her.

Though I had no reaſon to regret leaving her ſervice, my preſent change gave me no great pleaſure, as it wanted even the recommendation of novelty; my new maſter being the captain, with whom I had left the Spaniſh coaſt, who had at length been made ſo happy as to be ordered home.

CHAP. VI.

CHRYSAL *arrives in* ENGLAND. *His maſter is ſaluted by a fight not very pleaſing. The hiſtory of the unfortunate hero of the day opens ſome myſterious ſcenes.* THE OBVIOUS USE OF COUNCILS OF WAR.

(CHRYSAL's maſter having in the courſe of his voyage home given offence to his officers, by his prudential regard to his own ſafety; to obviate any bad conſequence which might attend their complaining to his ſuperiors, he reſolved to employ CHRYSAL's mediation in his favour, as ſoon as he ſhould arrive in ENGLAND.——VOL. I. Chap. x.)

His arrival in England preſented him with a ſcene that confirmed this reſolution, and made him wiſh he had not been in ſuch haſte to return. On his entering the harbour, he found all the boats of the men of war there

there drawn up around one ſhip, in which was diſplayed the dreadful ſignal of the execution of the commander. The ſight appalled his ſoul, conſcience anticipating the ſtroke of juſtice, and taking this as an omen of his own fate.

He had not time to brood over theſe gloomy reflections long, when an officer came on board him with an order to attend the execution in his boat, along with the other captains, which he obeyed, in a ſtate of mind ſcarce leſs unhappy than that of the criminal.

As ſoon as the bloody work was done, he waited on the chief commander, where the melancholy, in every face he met, was far from relieving the anxiety of his mind. He could have no pleaſure in ſuch company. When he had anſwered a few general queſtions of courſe, he went away to the ſhip of a captain of his intimate acquaintance, to learn ſome account of this ſhocking ſcene, for he had not had reſolution to make any enquiry about it; nor even to attend to the converſation of every one around him, which would have explained the whole.

After mutual congratulations on their meeting, my maſter ſignified his curioſity, which his friend promiſed to gratify over their bottle, as ſoon as they ſhould be alone after dinner.

Accordingly, when the coaſt was clear, 'You deſire information in an affair (ſaid he) that has given our corps the deepeſt wound we have ever received. The circumſtances are many, and myſterious; but I will ſtrive to give you a notion of it in as few words as poſſible, for it can be no pleaſure to either of us to dwell upon ſuch a ſubject.

'In the beginning of the war, ſoon after you went out to

to America, the unfortunate man who has this day fallen a ſacrifice to the humour of the times, was ſent out with a fleet to counteract the ſchemes of the enemy, and relieve a fortreſs of ours which they were then beſieging. (This was the purport of his public orders; but it will appear to you preſently, that he muſt have received private ones, of a very different nature from thoſe who at that time had the conduct of affairs.)

'Inſtead of making the expedition neceſſary to have carried his orders into execution with effect, he trifled away the time here, in ſuch a ſhameful manner, uſing every frivolous excuſe he could deviſe to delay his departure, that the voice of the public was raiſed againſt him; and it was found neceſſary to appoint another to the command in his place, in order to ſilence their clamour; but unfortunately for him, he ſailed the very day before his appointed ſucceſſor was to have ſet out to ſuperſede him.

'The ſame dilatory conduct threw a damp upon every thing he attempted to do. He ſeemed reſolved upon nothing; but though he was inveſted with the fulleſt powers to act as he ſaw proper himſelf, called councils of war to deliberate upon every the moſt trifling occaſion, that he might have the ſanction of their advice to excuſe his neglect, and often direct diſobedience of his orders; for you well know, that a council of war always ſpeaks the ſenſe of the commander.

'One inſtance of his proceeding in this manner will be ſufficient to juſtify this remark. He had been ordered to call at another fortreſs in his way, take from thence a reinforcement for the garriſon of that which he was ſent to relieve. On his arrival there, inſtead of demanding that reinforcement peremptorily as his orders

ders empowered him, and making the expedition, which the urgency of the occaſion required, he ſhewed ſuch indifference to the enterprize by his delays, and expreſſed ſuch diffidence of his ſucceſs, that the commanding officer took the alarm; and following his example, called a council of war to conſider whither he ſhould ſend it, which on mature deliberation he abſolutely refuſed, on account of the danger of weakening his own garriſon in caſe it ſhould be attacked; whereas, it was notorious that could never happen, if this unhappy man did his duty, as the force he had was ſufficient to keep the command of the ſea, and prevent any ſuch attempt. But far from urging this, he quietly acquieſced in the officer's excuſe, and ſailed away without the reinforcement, for which alone he had been ordered to ſtop there.

'On the ſame principles, when at length he came in ſight of the place, the ſiege of which was puſhed with the greateſt vigour, he excuſed his ſending any relief to it, on a pretence of the danger of entering the harbour, as if any military operation could be free from danger, and ſailed away to ſeek a fleet of the enemy, which was coming to aſſiſt the ſiege, and which he came up with ſooner than he wiſhed.

'An engagement now was unavoidable; but ſtill he had it in his power to prevent any effect from it, which he notoriouſly did, by trifling away his time in vain unneceſſary manœuvres, and pretending to come to action at a diſtance too great for him to do any thing.

'The enemy, whoſe intereſt it was to avoid an engagement, in which their moſt ſanguine hopes could not promiſe them ſucceſs, availed themſelves of this conduct, and made their eſcape; after having, from the

ſuperiority

superiority which his keeping aloof in this manner gave them, treated very roughly a part of his fleet that had advanced with less caution, and come really to action.

'This served him as a pretence for calling a council of war next day, by the advice of which, instead of pursuing the enemy, who had evidently fled from him, or making any attempt to relieve the fortress which was besieged, obviously the first object of his being sent out, he returned directly to the other, from which he was to have taken the reinforcement, as I mentioned before, to defend that from the danger brought upon it solely by his own conduct, leaving the former, deprived thus of every prospect of relief, to take its fate: and giving up the honour of his country, by flying from an enemy whom he might have vanquished, and who had fled from him before.

CHAP. VII.

Continued. Consequence of the foregoing conduct. An extraordinary sentence attempted to be reversed in an extraordinary manner, and by as extraordinary persons. The reason of this; and why it miscarried. More mysteries. Just fate of the BUNGLERS, *who left their poor* TOOL *in the lurch; with the consequence of this affair to a certain corps.*

'THE consequence of so strange a conduct was, the nation took fire, and with one voice demanded satisfaction for such a sacrifice of their interest and honour. He was therefore not only deprived of his command, but also sent home a prisoner; and after suffering every

indignity and abuſe which the rage of a licentious populace, broken looſe from all bounds, could ſuggeſt, brought to his trial, found guilty of neglecting to do all in his power to deſtroy the enemy, and for that crime has this day ſuffered the ſentence of the law; a ſentence not more unexpected by him, and extraordinary in itſelf, than in the manner it was paſſed; and afterwards attempted to be reverſed by thoſe who had paſſed it, when they reflected on the danger of eſtabliſhing a precedent, that might one day come home to themſelves.

'For perſuaded (perhaps by their knowledge of the true motives of his conduct) that nothing more was meant by the trial than to amuſe the public, they reſolved to act their parts in the farce, and found him guilty, as I have ſaid, of ſuch a part only of the charge againſt him, as common ſenſe could never conceive puniſhable with death, it being impoſſible to acquit himſelf abſolutely of the whole, without involving themſelves in his guilt, by which means they expected to ſave both his life and their own credit. But ſuch trimming ſeldom anſwers; the tables were now turned; and it was reſolved to carry even this ſame ſentence into execution, with the utmoſt ſeverity.

'Alarmed at a meaſure ſo contrary to their expectations, his judges were driven to their wit's end; and from a provident regard to themſelves left nothing unattempted to ſave him. They retracted, as far as was in their power, their own judgment! they petitioned the miniſtry! they applied to the whole body of the legiſlature. They prayed! they expoſtulated! they wept! but all was in vain. His fate was determined; and

and they only drew upon themſelves that contempt, which ſuch inconſiſtency deſerved.

'From this general account of his conduct it muſt have appeared to you, that he acted by ſecret orders, directly oppoſite to his public ones, as no man however proſtituted in principle, however infatuated by fear, (neither of which, it was well known, was his caſe) could otherwiſe poſſibly have acted in ſuch a manner, the inevitable conſequences of which were diſgrace and death. But if any doubt ſhould remain on your mind, from the inconſiſtency of man's actions at different times, the leaſt attention to the following circumſtances will effectually remove it.

'Repeated informations of the enemy's deſign upon that place had been ſent to thoſe in power for a conſiderable time before; but no notice was taken of them to reinforce the garriſon? or even order the officers, regularly belonging to it, to attend their duty, till the ſiege was actually begun; when this unfortunate man was ſent, but ſo late, that the common impediments of contrary winds might very poſſibly have delayed him ſo long as to defeat the deſign of his going, even had he exerted himſelf with the greateſt ardour.

'Had it alſo been really intended that he ſhould reinforce the garriſon, a force proper for that purpoſe would have been ſent directly from home, without ſubjecting him to the further delay of ſtopping for it at another place, where it might not be ſpared, as proved to be the caſe.

'And laſtly, had he not had ſecret reaſons, which he thought ſufficient to juſtify his conduct, it is not to be imagined that he would have waſted the time before he ſailed; that he would have accepted the refuſal of

the commanding officer of the fortreſs, from which he was to have taken the reinforcement, that he would not have attempted at leaſt to throw ſome relief into the place; and that he would not have fought the enemy's fleet, when he had the faireſt proſpect of defeating it; for the tenour of his former life acquitted him, as I have obſerved, of all ſuſpicion of cowardice, or traiterous correſpondence with the foes of his country.

'His conduct at and after his trial confirmed theſe remarks. Depending on ſupport from thoſe in power, he neglected the only meaſure prudence could have ſuggeſted for his defence, which was to have retorted the charge of his miſcarriage upon his very accuſers, and perplexed the cauſe with ſuch a variety of matter about diſobedience to ſignals, and breach of diſcipline, as to blind the world and bewilder his judges, ſo that they ſhould be glad to have acquitted him, if only to get rid of the plague of the enquiry; a method which experience had ſhewn to be effectual, in as flagrant a caſe as his. And even after he was condemned, his behaviour proved that he expected a pardon to the laſt moment, for a crime which he had committed in obedience to their orders. Why he did not produce thoſe orders, in his vindication, muſt have been, that they were only verbal ones; which in the blind luſt of miniſterial confidence and favour, he had been weak enough to take.

'The reaſon of his being ſo baſely deſerted is too obvious. The adminiſtration of thoſe who had employed him. had been ſuch a ſeries of blunders, (not to call it by a ſeverer name!) that they had not only been ſupplanted by another ſet, who promiſed better things; but were alſo obliged to give him up, as a ſin-offering,

to

to the rage of the people; as protecting, or pardoning him would have implied a participation of his guilt: And in this light the other party viewed it ſo ſtrongly, that they exerted all their ſtrength to have ſaved him, in hopes of being able by his means to gain a clue, to guide them through ſome of thoſe labyrinths of iniquitous and falſe policy, which they ſuſpected, but could not otherwiſe detect, to the entire overthrow of their rivals.

'This ſo abſolutely reverſed the whole ſcene, that they who would have ſupported, now found themſelves obliged to cruſh him, in their own defence, which, as it was the moſt popular meaſure, they were ſtill able to do.

'There is but one thing more neceſſary for me to add: and that is the motive for their giving him ſuch ſecret orders; which, as far as reaſon can judge in ſuch dark, confuſed myſteries, muſt have been this.

'Provoked at the repeated inſults and injuſtice of the French, the miniſtry here had precipitately plunged themſelves into a war, without being prepared, or even determined to purſue it; and then like a parcel of children who have exhauſted all their ſtrength and reſolution, in one ſpiteful aſſault, ſtood in a ſtate of ſtupefaction, utterly at a loſs how to proceed or retreat; till rouzed at length by the preparations and menaces of the enemy, they unluckily blundered in their fright upon the wretched expedient of letting them take this fortreſs, that for the recovery of it they might have a pretence for giving up to them thoſe places about which the diſpute began; and ſo botch up a peace any way, to get rid of a war they found themſelves unable to manage.

'The conſequence of this notable ſtroke of policy was, the ſpirit of the people was inflamed to ſuch a degree by this diſgrace upon their arms, that they have puſhed on the war with a reſolution little ſhort of madneſs; and the ſcheme, which the miniſters had ſo wiſely laid for their eſcape, only ſealed their ruin.

'This, my friend, is a ſhort but juſt ſketch of this unfortunate affair, to which I ſhall only add one circumſtance to prove what I ſaid of his being ſacrificed to the humour of the times. The officer who commanded in the fortreſs which was beſieged, and who in the defence of it had betrayed a want of every qualification neceſſary for ſuch an office, but courage, and had even let that be over-ruled by the inſtances of his officers, who were tired of fatigues and dangers from which they ſaw no proſpect of relief, to ſurrender it at laſt, without any abſolute neceſſity, was loaded with honours of every kind, in reward of a merit merely negative at beſt; that is, for not having done the very worſt in his power, and ſurrendered it at firſt, without making any defence.

'I have thus gratified your curioſity, in the beſt manner in my power. If I have made any miſtakes, they are not thoſe of intention; but have proceeded from the inability of reaſon to trace ſuch myſterious actions to their real motives. One obſervation though, I know I cannot be miſtaken in, which is that this affair has given a wound to our corps, (as I obſerved before) which it can never recover. For after ſuch an example, what officer, of any rank, can expect to eſcape ſhould he neglect to do his duty in the fulleſt manner, however powerful his private motives to the contrary may be?

'For

'For my own part, I cannot ſay it yet effects me much. I am poor, and therefore muſt puſh. If I ever have the good luck to be other, I know the conſequence, and will rather quit the ſervice, than hazard being ſhot, as I know muſt be any man's fate who ſhall hereafter be found to fail in the performance of his duty, from a prudential regard to the preſervation of his life or fortune; however great that fortune, or powerful his family.' And ſo here's to you, neck or nothing is now the word.

The effect which this whole account had upon my maſter may be eaſily conceived. He pledged his friend though without naming the toaſt; and aſſenting to his remarks, by an heavy ſigh, took his leave without ſaying a word.

CHAP. VIII.

CHRYSAL changes his ſervice. He gets a view of a court of CIVIL JUDICATURE, *on an extraordinary occaſion. Some reflections out of the common cant on the delays of the law. A whimſical application of an old ſtory produces the ſtrange effect of putting a counſellor out of countenance. The neceſſity of abſolute power in ſome government; with a common deciſion, by which nothing is decided.*

'AS ſoon as my maſter returned to his ſhip, he took me from his purſe, once more, and looking earneſtly at me, for ſome moments, We muſt part!' (ſaid he, with a ſigh) 'we muſt part! but I hope to good purpoſe. Thou only waſt the cauſe of that conduct which now gives me fear; exert therefore thy influence equally, where

where I now ſend thee; and thou wilt excuſe my fault, if it is one.

'Tears, at the thought of loſing me, here choaked his utterance. He gave me a laſt kiſs, and ſent me directly away, in company with a conſiderable number more, to mediate his peace.

'As the delicate nature of this tranſaction required ſome addreſs, he entruſted the management of it to his purſer, who had convinced him by many inſtances, of his ſagacity in the methods of obtaining an influence over the great *.'

My new maſter's road leading through a city, where a matter of great moment was under judicial determination, he waited for the event to gratify a natural curioſity.

The affair was this. A fore-maſt-man in a guard-ſhip, lying in one of the neighbouring harbours, had by repeated miſbehaviour in going clandeſtinely on ſhore, contrary to the expreſs orders of his captain, provoked him at length to give him a dozen at the gang-way, in order to terrify others from following his example.

Inſtead of being reclaimed by this puniſhment, the fellow perſiſted to miſbehave in ſuch a manner, that the captain, who was remarkably humane in his diſpoſition, diſcharged him from the ſhip to avoid the pain of puniſhing him any more.

This was juſt what the wretch wanted. Accordingly he went directly to a proſtituted, pettifogging attorney, who had before ſet him on the ſcheme; and employed him to ſue the captain at law, for an aſſault, in pu-

* Vol. I.---Page 5. Chap. xi.

niſhing

nishing him in the harbour, where he had no power so to do.

In a country governed by laws, they must regularly take their course, in every instance however flagrant in its particular circumstances.

After all the preliminary delays of practice, which grievous as they may in some circumstances be to an individual, are yet the safety of the public, the affair was now brought to a legal decision. You are too well acquainted with the forms of law to require a minute account of all which were observed in this case. But there was one incident which I cannot pass over.

As this was a matter that importantly concerned the interest of the navy, the rulers of it had ordered all the captains of the guard-ships, in the harbour where it had happened, to attend the trial, in order to inform the court in the usages of their service.

One of those, who had never seen a court of civil judicature before, but was a man of natural good sense and some reading, having listened to the unintelligible pleadings, and gross exaggerations of the counsel on both sides of the question, especially those hired in the prosecution, till his patience was quite exhausted, at length arose, and having obtained permission from the judge to speak, addressed himself to the court in these words:

'I am sent here by those, to whom the king has entrusted the conduct of his navy, to explain the nature and rules of our service to this court, in case I see any danger of their forming a wrong judgment of it, from inexperience in a matter so much out of their way.

'The little gentleman yonder has spent so much breath, and shewn such great reading on the subject, that

that I imagine it is proper for me to make him ſome anſwer, which I ſhall do in as few words as poſſible, being not half ſo long winded as he. But firſt I muſt beg leave to tell him a ſtory, to conform to rule.

'I have read in a book, (for I perceive that common ſenſe ſignifies nothing here, if not ſupported by a quotation, it matters not whether to the purpoſe or not!) that a certain philoſopher, having declaimed one day for a conſiderable length of time before Alexander the Great, at the head of his army, on the duties of a general, the Emperor turned about to Parmenio, one of his generals who ſtood near him, and aſked him, what he thought of his ſpeech?——Sire, (anſwered Parmenio) my opinion is, that I never heard a fool talk ſo learnedly.——

'I make no applications. All that I ſay on this occaſion is, that I am ſure that gentleman has never been at ſea; and conſequently knows nothing of the ſervice, on which he has been haranguing with ſuch vehemence and elocution. He has expatiated moſt pathetically on the injuſtice of inflicting corporal puniſhment, without a legal trial and condemnation; and flouriſhed on the danger of ſuch an invaſion of liberty. Theſe to be ſure are fine words; but I much doubt whether they are properly applied on this occaſion. The moſt perfect form of government is allowed to be abſolute deſpotiſm, as beſt calculated to work its effect without delay. In all the communities in this world, I doubt if there is one, where immediate obedience to the command of the governor is ſo indiſpenſibly neceſſary to the ſafety of the whole, or where individuals are ſo inſenſible to every other motive to obedience but fear, as in a man of war.

'I have

'I have myſelf the honour to command a ſhip, in which I have five hundred men under me, the greateſt part of whom, (I am ſorry to ſay it) are the out-caſts of human nature, as from ſome unhappy circumſtances is, and perhaps muſt always be the univerſal caſe in our ſervice. Now as inſtances daily occur, in which a moment's delay or heſitation to execute my orders, though attended with the greateſt difficulty, or moſt imminent danger, muſt evidently hazard the loſs of the ſhip, and every life in her; I deſire that gentleman to inform me how I am to act, ſhould one of the men, whom I order ſuppoſe, to cut away a yard that's broke in the ſlings, refuſe to go aloft, and tell me I have no right to puniſh him, till he is regularly tried and found guilty! Shall I admit of ſuch an anſwer, to be an example to the reſt? Or ſhall I puniſh him with ſuch ſeverity on the ſpot, by my own mere authority, as to terrify any other from imitating him? The anſwer to this plain queſtion will determine the affair under conſideration. If it is ſaid that in the preſent caſe the ſhip's being in the harbour makes a difference, let us ſuppoſe her on fire there, and that difference will vaniſh. In a word, if the abſolute authority indiſpenſably neceſſary for carrying on our ſervice in ſome inſtances is attempted to be abridged in any, it will of courſe be at length diſputed in all, and the ſervice ruined. All that can be done is to be cautious not to truſt it in improper hands.'

This method of reaſoning changed the face of the affair. The counſellor hung down his head, and ſlunk out of the court. The fears which had been entertained for public liberty vaniſhed; and the jury ſimply found the fact, but left the point of law to be determined by the judges; ſo that after all this expence and trouble,

matters

matters remained in the ſame ſtate of uncertainty as before, to the great joy of the lawyers.

CHAP. IX.

Chrysal's maſter joins a remarkable ſet of company. Their characters. Chrysal *changes his ſervice. Account of the enterprize on which his late maſter's companions were going; with the convincing arguments they uſed to procure obedience to their commands.*

THE purſer having on his arrival in London parted with Chrysal regularly, in the execution of the commiſſion entruſted to him by his captain; Chrysal, now in the shape of a Guinea, after ſeveral changes of ſervice, and a variety of curious adventures, has fallen into the hands of a Physician and Author; who, having ſhewn him many of the myſteries of the latter profeſſion, proceeds to introduce him into new ſcenes.——Vol. I. p. 133.

Happy in the contemplation of his own abilities, and the pleaſing proſpect they opened to him, my maſter proceeded to figure as uſual in his variegated ſphere. Accordingly he deſcended from his aerial citadel, and going out to viſit his patients, repaired directly to a tavern, to join a ſet of critics, and choice ſpirits, ſouls of ſentiment and fire, who were going that evening upon an expedition that was to immortalize their names.

This was no leſs than to aſſume the modeſt power of making laws that ſhould affect the property of a number of their fellow ſubjects; the execution of which

they were reſolved to enforce by the mild and equitable means, which the reſpectable legiſlature of the mob always uſe to enforce obedience to their decrees.

Thoſe who were honoured by being taken thus under their immediate command, were the actors of plays and interludes, of which, as the works of genius, and calculated for the entertainment of the idle, they claimed the ſole and abſolute rule.

You conclude from this, that they muſt have been perſons of learning, and large fortune, whoſe affluence gave them leiſure to attend to ſubjects, which their education qualified them to judge of; but the contrary was the fact. They were either blanks in the creation, whom a ſuperficial ſmattering of letters had filled with ſuch an opinion of themſelves, as to make them look with contempt upon every exertion of induſtry as beneath their dignity, though at the ſame time they were barely able to ſubſiſt without it, by all the little ſhifts of œconomy; or tradeſmen, almoſt abſolutely illiterate, who from a prepoſterous ambition of hiding an ignorance that was not any reproach to their ſtation, ſet up for the arbiters of taſte, on the ſtrength of a ſet of phraſes picked up at random, and of which they knew not even the meaning; and neglected the buſineſs by which they were to earn their bread, in order to make a ſhew of knowledge that could be of no uſe to them.

When this illuſtrious ſet had ſufficiently conned their ſeveral parts, in the great enterprize which they were going to undertake, and raiſed their reſolutions to a proper pitch by wine, they prepared to adjourn to the ſcene of action, the theatre; and calling for a bill, I was changed by my maſter to pay his club, and directly borrowed from the landlord by one of the lead-

ers of the party, who changed me again at the door of the theatre, to pay for his admiſſion.

Theſe changes of my ſervice however did not prevent my ſeeing the proceſs of this extraordinary affair. On the contrary; as I now belonged to the whole theatrical community in general, I had an opportunity of getting a full inſight into the nature and myſteries of every part of that profeſſion.

I ſee you deſire to know my ſentiments on a ſubject that has been canvaſſed by the ingenious of all ages. Such a curioſity is natural, and ſhall be gratified at a proper time; but at preſent I muſt not interrupt the account of this tranſaction.

From the manner in which thoſe ſelf-made legiſlators had talked, when together, of every circumſtance in the management of a theatre, and profeſſion of an actor, you would have concluded that they were going to overturn the whole preſent ſyſtem of the ſtage, and inſtitute another on principles directly oppoſite, according to their own ideas of perfection.

But that was not the caſe. Among all the errors and abuſes, againſt which they declaimed with ſuch vehemence, they thought proper to attack only one, which they thought moſt intereſting to themſelves in particular. This was the right, which reaſon and law gave the performers to fix the price of their own labours.

In the infancy of the ſtage in London, before it had been brought by much labour and expence to ſuch a degree of perfection as to attract the attention of the public, it had been the cuſtom, after a certain part of the repreſentation was over, to admit perſons for leſs than was paid at the beginning.

The

The obvious reaſon of this was to allure company of any kind thither, and take the moſt they could get, rather than keep the houſe empty. But when the paſſion for ſeeing plays aroſe to its preſent height, this expedient appeared to be no longer neceſſary, and therefore was diſuſed; a change which thoſe who conducted the entertainments of the theatre juſtified, by alledging the enhanced ſalaries of the actors, and the improvements made in the machinery, and decorations of the ſtage ſince the time when that cuſtom was introduced, which they ſaid required reimburſement, by a method that could not juſtly be taken offence at, as none were obliged to go who did not approve of the terms.

Such a meaſure was moſt alarming to theſe men of taſte, ſome of whom denied themſelves the pleaſure of going to the beginning of the performance, becauſe they were not able to pay the full price; as the others, could not get from behind their compters before it was half ended; and for theſe good reaſons, both thought it the higheſt grievance to have a cuſtom aboliſhed that had been ſo convenient to them.

Accordingly, as ſoon as the performance began, they all aroſe, and without any reſpect to the reſt of the audience, interrupted the players in the moſt outrageous manner, nor would deſiſt, till the managers ſhould promiſe to redreſs the grievance which affected them ſo ſeverely, and take half prices as before.

This was too flagrant a violation of juſtice to be ſubmitted to, ſo ſuddenly. The managers therefore refuſed; upon which theſe redreſſers of grievances gave a looſe to their reſentment, at ſuch an inſtance of diſobedience to their authority; and tore the houſe to pieces,

doing more damage to the proprietors, than their own entire worldly ſubſtance could repair.

CHAP. X.

The ruinous appearance of the ſcene of action ſupplies matter for mirth to thoſe whoſe trade it is to laugh at every thing. The point carried againſt law and reaſon. Enquiry into the cauſe of this. The riſe of the profeſſion of an actor.

WHEN theſe men of genius and public ſpirit had thus gallantly accompliſhed their enterprize they marched off in triumph, denouncing a repetition of their reſentment, ſhould their orders not be obeyed.

The appearance of the houſe, after this ravage, and the looks of the actors when they ventured to creep out of their holes, ſeemed to realize the mimic ſcenes uſually exhibited there. All was havoc, deſolation, amazement, and affright. Crowns, ſceptres, candleſticks, and broken benches were jumbled together: Sovereigns, and ſweepers, lords, link-boys, ducheſſes, and cinder-wenches, joined in one common lamentation of their fate.

This, however, laſted not long. Their hearts were not formed of ſtuff for grief to make a deep impreſſion on: Nor were they ſo unaccuſtomed to the rubs of life as to be dejected at any miſchance. Their concern therefore wore off with their fright; and one of them, reſuming his character of turning every thing to ridicule, marched with ſolemn pace and rueful countenance up to the motely ruins now collected into a heap, and with ſome droll variations, apt to the occaſion, ſpouted over

over them a tragic ſpeech, in all the emphaſis and trick of woe. The humour inſtantly ran through them all. Mirth grinned on every face; and they vied in cracking villainous jeſts on each other's undoing.

But the managers had ſuffered too ſeverely in their property to be in ſo merry a mood. They conſulted among themſelves, and with the ſages of the law, what was proper for them to do, to obtain redreſs for ſuch injuſtice, and prevent the menaced repetition of it. But all was to no purpoſe. Law gave way to licentiouſneſs, and they were obliged to ſubmit to the moſt intolerable of all tyrannies, that of the mob.

You are ſurpriſed that ſuch things ſhould be, in a country governed by equal and eſtabliſhed laws. In ſpeculation it muſt ſeem ſtrange; but the leaſt acquaintance with life would reconcile you to inconſiſtencies ſtill groſſer. There is ſomething however in the circumſtances of this caſe, which deſerves attention, and makes it not improper to trace to their origin the prejudices from which ſuch injuſtice could proceed.

When the ſyſtem of Divine worſhip, which is now profeſſed in theſe parts of the world, was firſt propoſed to mankind, the human mind was a ſlave to ſuperſtitions, which were a diſgrace to that portion of reaſon given for its direction.

By a perverſion, of which man alone is capable, the celebration of thoſe ſuperſtitions, though profeſſedly deſigned in honour of the Deity, was attended with games, and ſcenical interludes, in which the groſſeſt immoralities received the ſanction of religion, and were practiſed openly as pleaſing to him. This was done to attach the paſſions of the multitude: and ſatisfy their curioſity with ſenſible repreſentations, in order to

prevent their making rational enquiries into the grounds of thoſe ſuperſtitions, the principles of which were ſubſervient to the policy of the ruling powers.

A religion inſtituted on purpoſe to reclaim man from immoralities and ſuperſtitions, and reſtore him to the dignity of his nature, neceſſarily ſtruck at every thing that conduced to their ſupport: Accordingly the perſons appointed to propagate it, exerted all their endeavours againſt thoſe games and interludes, both as a part of the ſuperſtitious worſhip which they wanted to aboliſh, and as in themſelves ſubverſive of moral virtue, by the vices which they exhibited to imitation, heightened and made ſtill more alluring by every incentive art and pomp of expence.

For this purpoſe, reaſon as well as religion ſupplied ready and powerful arguments; but not content to wait for the ſlow effect of theſe, they ſtrove to prejudice thoſe whom they could not perſuade; and to obviate the imitation of their example, raiſed an abhorrence to the perſons of all concerned in ſuch repreſentations; caſting them off from the rites of religion, and declaring them unworthy both of the protection of the laws, and the common privileges of ſociety: A method that in one reſpect defeated its own deſign; as it could never reclaim the offenders, however it might deter others from following their example.

Nor did they ſtop here. By an error too common in the heat of argumentation, they concluded from the abuſe, againſt the uſe of the ſtage, and branded with the mark of reprobation all future actors for the faults of the preſent.

CHAP.

CHAP. XI.

Continued. The common conſequences of exceſs of zeal. The profeſſed intent of the theatrical repreſentations defeated by this abſurd prejudice againſt actors. The vices againſt which this prejudice is levelled, in reality the effects of it; with the means of remedying this and other abuſes.

HOWEVER the occaſion might there ſeem to juſtify this exceſs of zeal, when the cauſe ceaſed, the effect ſhould in reaſon have ceaſed alſo; and theſe general cenſures have been repealed. The ſuperſtitions which were the foundation of the firſt charge againſt the ſtage have been long aboliſhed; nor are the abſurdities and immoralities which gave offence to reaſon and virtue any longer practiſed there. On the contrary, the profeſſed intent of theatrical repreſentations at preſent is, to inſinuate inſtruction under the pleaſing appearance of entertainment, to encourage virtue by example, and inculcate the practice of it, by ſhewing the evils inſeparably attendant on vice, to regulate the paſſions by diſplaying the danger of indulging them too far, and to put folly out of countenance by holding it up to ridicule.

Now as experience has proved the ſtage capable of anſwering theſe great ends, what can be more injudicious than to attempt to bring it into diſrepute? What more unjuſt than to conſign to infamy thoſe who exert the fineſt powers of the human mind and body, to accompliſh this end in the moſt pleaſing manner? Yet ſuch is the abſurdity of man, that while perſons of the

the moſt exalted rank and ſacred character, not only frequent the theatre, but all compoſe works to be repreſented on it, and evidently value themſelves more on poſſeſſing the abilities requiſite to compoſe them, than on all their other diſtinctions in life, thoſe from whoſe actions ſuch compoſitions receive their force and beauty, are held in diſrepute, and ſubject to the ſevereſt diſadvantages only for acting them. If it is no diſgrace to write a play, why ſhould it be any to act it?

It is true the conſequences of this prejudice are not ſo ſevere here as in other countries, but ſtill they are ſuch as reaſon is aſhamed of. If actors are not literally excluded from the protection of the laws, they want ſupport to avail themſelves of that protection, as in the caſe which gave riſe to theſe reflections! if they are not actually (for literally they are) excluded from the rites of religion, they want encouragement to participate in them!

I ſee you are ready to object to the utility of the ſtage, the faults in many of the performances exhibited upon it; and to juſtify the diſrepute affixed to the character of an actor, from the general immorality of their conduct in private life, as if it aroſe ſolely from their profeſſion. But a moment's reflection would ſuggeſt anſwers to both theſe objections.

If there is any improper exhibition upon the ſtage, ſurely the blame ſhould fall on thoſe who have a legal power to prevent ſuch abuſe of the inſtitution of it! If the actors are immoral in their lives, ſhould it not be conſidered that they are prejudged from their profeſſion, and deprived of one of the ſtrongeſt inducements to virtue,

virtue, that is reputation, before they are proved to be guilty of vice.

The conſequence of this is, that too few enter into the profeſſion, till after they have loſt their reputation, or are driven by mere neceſſity; by which means they reflect that diſgrace upon it which they are thought to ſuffer from it; and as they are ſenſible that they are precluded by this prejudice from all poſſibility of recovering or preſerving it by the moſt careful deportment, they become deſperate, and proceed till they even loſe the ſenſe of unavailing ſhame.

Whereas, if a different conduct was obſerved to them! if the brand of reprobation was taken off, and the profeſſion eſtabliſhed in that credit, which the abilities indiſpenſibly neceſſary to eminence in it deſerve; Genius would be no longer damp'd by apprehenſion of reproach: More perſons of good character would not ſcruple going on the ſtage, as they could preſerve it there; nor vice ſeem to receive encouragement from the public favour, becauſe from this circumſtance unhappily too often entangled with merit; but the life of the actor reflect the ſentiments of the poet, and enforce them to imitation by example.

Nor would it be difficult to work this important effect. All neceſſary would be to refuſe admiſſion on the ſtage to all, notorious for vice of any kind; to baniſh from it ſuch as ſhould become ſo after, however eminent in their merits; and to ſupport the profeſſion, by the civil power, againſt the tyranny of the mob, ſo that the lives and properties of all concerned in it ſhould be ſecure from ſuffering ſuch licentious outrage, and injuſtice, as no other ſubjects are expoſed to; and as are

equally

equally a reproach and insult to the good government and common sense.

Nor need it be apprehended, that this would make them insolent, or slacken their endeavours to please. Their very being depend on public favour, the bare withholding of which is punishment sufficiently severe; as ambition to acquire it will make them exert their utmost abilities, and always observe proper humility to the arbiters of their fate. They know that if they are neglected, they cannot live: On the contrary, it would enable them to rise to greater merit in their art, as they would no longer be under the wretched necessity of prostituting their own judgment to please the gross taste of their tyrants.

Many other arguments might be alledged against this grievous and shameful abuse, but what I have said is sufficient to convince candid reason; and with prejudice it is in vain to argue.

CHAP. XII.

The system of policy by which Chrysal's *master governed his state. Account of his methods of parrying poets. The reason why so few new plays are acted. Enquiry into the present state of genius. The general motives for writing plays preclude them from success. Managers and poets equally in fault in their dealings with each other.*

THE day after this great affair was thus equitably settled, on the treasurer's making up his week's account, I came into the possession of the manager, who having some occasion for money, put me into his pocket.

The

The meaſures of my new maſter's government in his little empire were the ſtrongeſt burleſque on the policy of the world, the greateſt ſovereign in which had not more intrigues of ſtate to manage, than were continually carrying on about him, from the ambition, envy, and jealouſy of the ſeveral candidates for his royal favour.

But all this buſtle did not embarraſs him in the leaſt. He had the addreſs to play off one party againſt another; and by never engaging himſelf particularly to any, was able to manage all. A method, by the bye, that might ſuggeſt an hint not unuſeful to politicians in an higher ſphere.

But the part of his conduct that was moſt curious, and gave me the greateſt pleaſure, was his manner of parrying the attacks of the authors, who were continually bringing him their works for repreſentation on the ſtage, of which I had an opportunity of ſeeing many ſtriking inſtances.

As it is evidently the intereſt of the manager of a theatre, to exhibit thoſe performances whoſe merit is moſt likely to gain the approbation of the public; and as no man, who is capable of writing a piece proper for exhibition, can be ſuppoſed to want judgment to know whether it has that merit, you may naturally think that there could not be much difficulty in the intercourſe between them; but human actions are not always to be judged of from the ſtrongeſt appearances of reaſon.

The repreſentation of a new piece neceſſarily puts the manager to ſome expence, and much trouble. If you add to this the natural anxiety about ſucceſs, for merit is often rejected by caprice, or perſonal prejudice,

judice, you would not wonder that he ſhould be cautious what he brings upon the ſtage; and prefer acting old ones, unattended with theſe inconveniences, while the public will bear the repetition, and does not peremptorily demand new.

This is the real reaſon why ſo few new pieces are performed; and not any decline of poetical genius to produce them; it being certain that there are as many good plays written now, as at any former point of time. But the matter is this. All the good ones of thoſe times lie together before you, and raiſe your opinion to the happy days which produced them: But if you conſider the long intervals between, and the innumerable bad ones which appeared along with them, but are now loſt in the wreck of time, you will find that you have not ſo great reaſon to complain of the preſent decline of genius, as you may have imagined.

I do not by this mean, that every one who pretends to write is poſſeſſed of that genius; or that all the pieces offered to the ſtage are proper for repreſentation. On the contrary, many who want every qualification indiſpenſible to ſucceſs in ſuch attempts, make them every day in defiance of reaſon; and ſtrive to obtrude upon the public, works which are a reproach to common ſenſe.

The motives of this are obvious. Whenever a man is at a loſs how to ſpend his time, or wants to raiſe a little money, down he ſits, without more ado, and writes a play. The conſequence of this is, that the very reaſons which made him turn poet, neceſſarily preclude him from ſucceſs. Idleneſs prevents that care, that limæ labor, which alone can make a performance proper for public repreſentation; and diſtreſs depreſſes

the imagination; and hinders its riſing to that happy boldneſs, which is the eſſence of poetry.

It appears from hence, that if the managers of theatres from intereſted motives are often to blame for rejecting good pieces; poets (or thoſe who would be thought ſuch) are much oftener culpable for offering them bad ones. The difference of opinion unavoidable on this account occaſions the difficulty in their intercourſe. But in this the conteſt is not equal. The word of the manager is deciſive; while the poet has nothing left, put to vent his reſentment in unavailing (and often unjuſt) complaints and abuſe, in which thoſe who have leaſt right are always loudeſt; for enamoured with the beauty of their own offspring, like the Ape in the fable, they throw dirt at all who preſume to find fault with it.

But ſevere as it muſt be to ſuffer this, it is not the greateſt difficulty the manager has to encounter with them. Not ſatisfied with the civil refuſal of affected delays and excuſes, they muſt have a direct anſwer, which they controvert with all their power, and oblige him to ſupport by ſuch arguments as muſt give him pain, if he has either politeneſs or good-nature; tho' after all, inſtead of convincing them, he only gets their's and their friends ill-will, and arms all their tongues againſt him.

It is not to be doubted but the evaſions which managers uſe to ſhift off good pieces are as groſly offenſive to moral propriety, truth and candour, as the arguments of authors in defence of bad ones can poſſibly be to reaſon; but as I did not happen to be witneſs to any inſtances of them, I ſhall confine my account to the latter.

CHAP. XIII.

CHRYSAL's maſter ſits in judgment on ſome pieces offered to him. A poet of faſhion enters. The arguments by which he ſupports his work againſt the objections of CHRYSAL's *maſter, who makes ſome curious dramatical ſtrictures. The poet driven from his laſt retreat, the intereſt of his great friends, by the common cant of the houſe's being* FULL *for the ſeaſon, departs in a rage, denouncing their reſentment, which* CHRYSAL's *maſter ſhews his reaſon not to fear the effects of.*

THE important morning after I came into the poſſeſſion of the manager, was big with the fate of many a poetical performance, the authors of which were appointed to come there for his deciſive anſwer.

Accordingly, as ſoon as he had breakfaſted, he repaired to his tribunal, where he had been waited for, ſome time by one of thoſe aſpiring genius's, who ſacrifice the ſolid happineſs of independence, to the vain ambition of being well with the great: ſubmitting to their capricious humours for the honour of a nod in public places, or an invitation to their tables; to enhance their welcome at which, and conſume time they know not how to make better uſe of, they fall upon this wiſe expedient of turning poets.

When they had gone through all the formalities of polite addreſs, and taken their ſeat with proper ceremony, the poet opened the buſineſs. 'Well, Sir, (ſaid he with a ſmile of ſelf-complacence) you have peruſed that

that trifle! what is your opinion? Heh! don't you think it will do?'

'Sir, (anſwered my maſter, with the ſmooth ſimper of a courtier) you do it injuſtice by calling it a trifle! the piece has a great deal of merit; and reads very prettily in many places; but I fear it is not quite ſo proper for the ſtage!'—

'How, Sir! not proper for the ſtage! pray, Sir, where does the impropriety lie? Several perſons of the firſt rank have read it, and found no ſuch thing. His Grace ſaid it abounded with the vis comica, Lord Taſtely was charmed with the Attic ſalt; and Sir Courtley admired the elegance of the diction. Pray, Sir, where then can the impropriety lie? They are allowed to be judges.'——

—'Pardon me, Sir, I do not preſume to call their judgment in queſtion, in the leaſt. But—a—'

—'And why then ſhould you heſitate to receive it? they will ſupport it with all their intereſt.'—

'That, Sir, I do not doubt. But—ſtill, Sir,—the town'——

——'The town, Sir! and pray what of the town? Is the judgment of the town to be put into competition with theirs?'—

'No, Sir! by no means! but ſtill the town is a very formidable and arbitrary judge; and will not admit its authority to be diſputed in ſuch matters as this.'——

—'And pray, good Sir! what objections can the judicious town, or you, its learned advocate, make?'—

—'Sir, you impoſe a very diſagreeable taſk upon me! I had much rather be excuſed.'—

'I do not in the leaſt doubt that, Sir; but my

friends inſiſt upon a direct anſwer. Either receive the play, or ſay why you will not.'—

—'Sir, I ſhould be very ſorry to give offence to any gentleman; but ſince you inſiſt upon my opinion, Do not you think, Sir, the plot is too—too—too domeſtic? Are not the intrigues and tricks of ſervants too low a ſubject for polite entertainment?'—

—'How, Sir! have you any objection to ſervants? Do not they make a principal part in all our modern comedies? Are the Jeremy's, and Scrubs, and Phillis's, and a thouſand others to be rejected, becauſe they are ſervants?'—

—'No, Sir! but conſider they are not the principal characters; nor does the plot turn upon them. They come in as it were by accident; and indeed, except in the inſtances you have mentioned, and perhaps a very few more, they had much better be left out. It ſhews a groſſneſs of taſte to ſtoop to them for entertainment.'—

—'And do not I introduce the maſters, and miſtreſſes too, as well as the ſervants? Are there not country-ſquires, and town fops, and fine ladies?'—

'Yes, Sir! you do introduce them, but in a ſubordinate light; and merely to be the dupes of their ſervants, without any buſineſs, or importance of their own.'—

—'And pray, Sir, in what other light do moſt maſters appear? Hah! hah! hah!—Well then it ſeems all your objections are to the fable. You have nothing to ſay againſt the ſentiments and diction.'—

—'The ſentiments, Sir, may be very proper; and the diction ſuited to them; but you muſt be ſenſible that the former objection affects them all equally. The characters

racters are too low; and the ſentiments and diction conſequently too coarſe.'——

'Sir,—Sir,—Sir,—I ſhall not enter into any farther arguments with you. His Grace bids me tell you he inſiſts upon your receiving it: or giving him ſuch reaſons as he ſhall think ſatisfactory, which muſt be very different from thoſe inſignificant cavils.'—

—'His Grace need not exert his authority to influence my obedience. The leaſt hint of his pleaſure were ſufficient; but unluckily I am engaged for the whole ſeaſon! quite full.'——

—'Full! why did you not tell me ſo at firſt?'——

—'Becauſe you inſiſted on having my opinion.'—

—'Very well, Sir! I ſhall let his Grace and all my friends know how you behaved. Let me have the play! impertinent, inſolent, ignorant puppy!' muttered he, as he went out.

'So (ſaid my maſter, as ſoon as he was gone) I have now made him my enemy for ever. As for his noble friends they are above troubling themſelves about any thing of the kind, and give him leave to mention their names, only to get rid of his importunity.'

CHAP. XIV.

Continuation. CHRYSAL'S *maſter rejects the work of a poet for his ignorance of the laws of the drama. More dramatical ſtrictures. The poet modeſtly inſiſts that his play is refuſed only becauſe it wants the intereſt of the great; and goes off in an huff. Another poet repulſed for his attachment to the laws of the drama. Arguments againſt theſe laws. The poet refuſes to conform to the preſent taſte; and makes an appeal. One more poet refuſed only for wanting every poetical talent. Remarks on ſomething that affects more than care to own it.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice, on an occaſion not common.*

THE laſt poet was ſcarce down ſtairs when a footman announced the entrance of another.

My maſter did not think it neceſſary to obſerve ſo much ceremony with him, as he had done with the former, but told him directly that he could not receive his piece.

Such a ſentence ſtruck the poet all of an heap. He was unable to ſpeak for ſome moments; but recovering himſelf at length, 'Not receive it, Sir! (ſaid he) you ſurprize me. Pray, Sir, why ſo?'——

'I am very loth to find fault, Sir! (anſwered my maſter) but you ſeem to be utterly unacquainted with all the laws of the drama.'

—'The laws of the drama! they are but art; I write from nature. Thoſe laws have been long laid aſide. Shakeſpeare wrote without laws.'—

—'So

—'So much the worſe. But he is a dangerous example to imitate. The local, temporary laws of the ancient drama are laid aſide, it is true; but not the immutable, general laws of propriety and reaſon. Your fable is inconnected, improbable, and unaffecting.'——

'How, Sir! unaffecting! Can the fall of a mighty empire be ſaid to be unaffecting?'——

——'No, Sir! But the deſcription of it moſt certainly may, if not drawn with judgment and force. And then your characters are ill ſupported; and your ſentiments and language loſt in the clouds.'

——'What, Sir! can the ſentiments of Kings and Princes be too ſublime?'

——'There is a wide difference between being ſublime, and ſwollen out of nature.'——

——'But what objection can you make to the language, Is it not raiſed with epithets, and metaphors, and all the figures of poetry?'——

——'Good Sir! poetical figures in poor language look like embroidery on a blanket. They only make its poverty ridiculous. Beſide your ſtalking in their ſtilts, betrays you into many a ſtumble in the dirt. Your figures frequently fly in the face of common ſenſe, and break through every rule of grammar.'——

——'Well, Sir! I ſhall conſider of theſe particulars. The great objection I have heard made to modern plays, is their want of buſineſs: But this can never be charged to mine. There is a ghoſt, and a battle, and a king dethron'd. Buſineſs enough and enough, I am ſure.'——

—'Ghoſts and battles, Sir, it is true, are ſometimes introduced with ſucceſs; but then it muſt be by a maſter

maſter in the art, elſe they have a very contrary effect.'—

——'I apprehend that the aim of tragedy is to work upon the paſſions. In this I believe you cannot ſay I have fail'd. The diſtreſs is truly great.'——

——'Diſtreſs when out of character loſes the appearance of reality, and becomes ridiculous. A king in an alms-houſe, and a queen begging from door to door, are images which ſink into burleſque.'——

——'It is very well, Sir! you may ſay what you pleaſe, but I am ſatisfied it is not want of merit in my play that makes you refuſe it. You daily act much worſe. If it had been recommended to you by ſome lord, you would have found none of theſe faults; but merit may ſtarve without intereſt to ſupport it now-a-days. This is fine encouragement to genius truly; and the public is like to be well entertained while ſuch men have it in their power to refuſe every thing that does not happen to pleaſe themſelves.'——

Saying this he ſnatched up his play, leaving my maſter to pleaſe himſelf with the proſpect of being criticized upon in a news-paper, and pulled to pieces in a ſcurrilous pamphlet.

He had not time to indulge theſe reflections long, when another of his clients attended his levee.

As ſoon as he was ſeated, 'I have read over your work with great care;' (ſaid my maſter), and am ſorry to ſay, I think it improper for the ſtage.'—

—'Pray, Sir, why ſo?' (anſwered the poet, with an air of importance) 'It is written ſtrictly according to the rules of the drama; and enriched with the ſublimeſt ſentiments of the ancients.'——

'Sir, I am ſenſible of its merit; as well as of the great

great learning of the author: But the taſte of the times requires entertainment of a different kind.'

---' Surely compliance with a vitiated taſte will not juſtify the breach of rules, taken originally from nature, and eſtabliſhed for ſo many ages.'

---' I neither diſpute the original juſtice, nor the antiquity of them: But I apprehend that the latter in a great meaſure deſtroys the preſent force of the former. The cuſtoms of mankind, the part of nature that comes within the province of the drama, are ſo changed ſince the eſtabliſhment of thoſe rules, that it would be moſt abſurd to exact obedience to them now. Beſides, may it not be ſaid, without violation of the reſpect due to antiquity, that experience in a great length of time may have made many improvements in thoſe rules. The infancy of every art is weak.'—

—' But whatever change may have happened in the cuſtoms of the world, truth ſtill remains the ſame, and the genuine ſentiments of nature cannot diſpleaſe.'——

—' Very true! but ſtill they may not always be received with equal pleaſure, in the ſame garb. Unimpaſſioned ſentiment, however juſt and ſublime, works not the effects deſigned by the drama, whoſe aim is to convey inſtruction and pleaſure at the ſame time, by an immediate addreſs to the paſſions.'—

—' Is it poſſible, that you can be an advocate for the irregular monſters, which at preſent diſhonour the ſtage?'——

—' As for irregularity, I look upon it to be but an imaginary defect. Though even if it were otherwiſe, I am the ſervant of the public, and obliged to find entertainment for their taſte, be it what it will. If you would but conform.'——

—' No,

—'No, Sir! that I never will, againſt reaſon and the antients. I ſee you are prejudiced, and therefore ſhall not argue with you any longer. But I ſhall not acquieſce in ſilence. I will publiſh the performance, without being diſcouraged by your refuſal, and appeal to the judgment of the learned.'—

He then marched off with a ſtately pace, and my maſter, looking after him, 'There again (ſaid he, ſhrugging his ſhoulders) I ſhall now have the ghoſts of Sophocles, and Ariſtotle, and all the doughty antients raiſed to haunt me.'—

As he ſaid this, a perſon entered whoſe whole appearance ſpoke diſtreſs. He approached my maſter bowing lowly, and trembling with anxiety as he ſpoke: 'I have made bold to wait upon you, Sir!' (ſaid he) 'but if you are not at leiſure, will call another time.'—

'Pray, Sir, ſit down;' (replied my maſter, with a ſmile of encouragement) 'I have looked over your work, and am concerned that it is not in my power to receive it; as I ſhould be ſincerely glad to ſerve you. But in this, it is not poſſible. I muſt be plain with you—You ſeem to want every poetical talent.'—

'I thought, Sir,' (returned the poet, ſcarce able to collect ſpirit enough to ſpeak to him) 'that the buſineſs of tragedy was to work upon the paſſions! I depended entirely on the diſtreſs.'—

—'Very true, Sir! But there are other paſſions, beſides pity, to be applied to: nor is poverty a proper diſtreſs to work upon them. Severe as it is to be felt, it affects but little in repreſentation. The upper ranks of life know not what it is; and thoſe who do are deſirous to keep the thought at a diſtance; and conceal a knowledge

a knowledge they are aſhamed of. The mind muſt be properly prepared to feel for another. The deſcription of a famine would affect but little after a feaſt.'

This came too home to the unhappy poet. He burſt into tears; and was departing without being able to make any reply. My maſter felt his diſtreſs; though he could not receive his play, as he knew that an audience would pay no regard to his circumſtances, nor give up an evening's entertainment to relieve an author's indigence; and waiting on him to the door, ſlipped a couple of guineas into his hand; when it fell to my lot to change my ſervice.

I had never experienced my own influence on the human heart ſo ſtrongly, as on this occaſion. The poet kiſſed the hand of his benefactor in a rapture too big for utterance: and forgetting for a moment all his diſtreſſes, went to a coffee-houſe and changed me to pay for his breakfaſt; where I was immediately borrowed at the bar, by an officer, who was going to dine with his general, and wanted money to give his ſervants.

VOL. I.---Page 136.

CHAP.

CHAP. XV.

Chrysal's maſter engages in a genteel amour. A delicate way of refining pleaſure. His miſtreſs perſuades him that ſhe has poiſoned him, and herſelf. His ſituation at hearing this. Striking proofs of medical ſkill, with the advantage of a regular courſe of practice. An exemplary inſtance of charity and forgiveneſs diverts the doctor's attention to the murdereſs.

(CHRYSAL, after having ſeen ſeveral ſtriking ſcenes, in the courſe of an extenſive circulation, is at length carried to an horſe-race, where he is initiated in ſome of the myſteries of the turf.)

'It was on a ſporting bett, on one of the bye matches, that I was loſt that evening to the nobleman, as I ſaid, in whoſe poſſeſſion I happened to remain till the end of the meeting.' Vol. II.------Page 105.

As it was late in the evening when my maſter arrived in London, he reſolved to indulge himſelf for that night in the embraces of a tender-hearted female, whom he picked up in the ſtreet, (for he was no way nice in his amours,) as he walked from the inn, where he alighted, to his own houſe, in order to ſtretch his legs.

Nothing more than common occurrences paſſed on this occaſion. When his lordſhip had made his miſtreſs nobly drunk, by the way of refining his pleaſure, the delicate pair went lovingly to bed together, where, awaking about midnight, he was ſurpriſed to find her cold, and lifeleſs in his arms. After ſome fruitleſs ef-

forts to move her, he ſtarted out of bed in a fright, and called up all his ſervants; who perceiving that ſhe was not actually dead, took ſuch pains to recover her, that ſhe at length opened her eyes, and ſtaring wildly around her for ſome moments. 'Where am I? (ſaid ſhe) Are theſe the regions of the damn'd? For thither only can ſuch ſelf-murdering wretches, as I am, go.'---Then ſeeing his lordſhip, whoſe curioſity had brought him to the bed-ſide, 'and are you dead too? (continued ſhe, wringing her hands and weeping moſt paſſionately) O why did I not confine my rage to myſelf? Why did I add your murder to my own, to plunge my ſoul ſtill deeper in perdition?'------

This ſurprized all preſent. The ſervants, who were indifferent whether it were true or falſe, imagined ſhe only raved, and doubled their efforts to bring her to herſelf, ſoothing her with expreſſions of tenderneſs, and telling her ſhe was not dead, but would ſoon be very well: But my maſter was too nearly concerned to think ſo coolly of the matter.

'What is that you ſay? (ſaid he, trembling in horror) what is it you ſay about murder? There is no one murdered here.'

'How! (anſwered ſhe, fixing her eyes eagerly upon him) Is it poſſible, that I am ſtill alive? And that you alſo live? It cannot be! the poiſon which I ſwallowed this night, and in which you ſhared too largely, cannot have miſſed of its effect. But ſoft: its operation now begins! that pang!---oh!---that pang beſpeaks the near approach of death!---O mercy!---Q cry for mercy on your ſins!'---

'What poiſon? (interrupted he, terrified almoſt to

diſtraction) what poiſon have I ſhared in? Speak? tell me directly, or'—

'Spare your threats, my lord, (ſaid ſhe, with a compoſure in her looks and manner that perſuaded every one preſent ſhe was in her ſenſes) ſpare your threats to a wretch whom death will ſoon deliver from your power; and forgive a crime, that proceeded from deſpair. Wearied of the miſeries of this life, I this night reſolved to put an end to it, and for that purpoſe, though on another pretence, procured a doze of poiſon from a Chymiſt's apprentice, who, on giving it to me, ſaid it was ſufficient to kill twenty of the ſtrongeſt men alive: And this poiſon did I take an opportunity to put into the laſt bottle of wine, when you went out of the room determined to ſacrifice one man to my revenge for the injuries I had received from the ſex: Though after I had done it, my heart relented; but you inſiſted on my drinking, and fear of your reſentment prevented me from making a diſcovery, that would have ſaved us both from this unhappy'—At theſe words ſhe fell into convulſions ſo ſtrong, that every one who ſaw her thought ſhe was really in the agonies of death.

The ſituation of my maſter, at this ſight, may be eaſily conceived. He inſtantly felt every pain that poiſon could produce: and falling on the floor, roared aloud in anguiſh of mind and body, lamenting his untimely fate, and confeſſing all the ſins of his life, to the ſervants who ſtood around him.

As ſoon as they had raiſed him up and carried him into another room, a dawn of hope aroſe at his finding he did not immediately die. 'What! (exclaimed he) is every one combined againſt me? Am I to periſh for want

want of assistance? will no-body even call me a physician? Perhaps I might yet be saved, were proper means applied! will no-body call me a physician?"——

On his saying this, every one was running to obey him, the sight of which threw him into new distress. 'O wretch that I am! (exclaimed he) and so I am to be left alone! to perish for want even of a drop of water! is it not enough for some of you to go; and not all to desert me in this base, this barbarous manner?"——This seemed to restore them to their senses; and accordingly, while some went to call the doctors, the rest staid to take care of him.

Where the carrion is, the crows will soon be gathered together. He was immediately surrounded by half the meagre faces of the faculty, (for as he had not named any one in particular, his servants to shew their care had summoned all they knew of) who taking the account he gave them of his being poisoned for truth, proceeded instantly to practise upon him every method they had ever heard of being used in such a case, in hopes that some one of them might take effect. He was cup'd, bled, and blistered; vomited, clystered, and purged, in the space of two hours; the doctors sagaciously discovering new symptoms of the poison, every new remedy they tried.

When they found that beyond their expectations he had strength enough to out-live all this, they put him into bed, and covering him up warm, to take a sweat, comforted him with hopes of his recovery, in consequence of their skill and care.

While they waited patiently for this important crisis, some of them happened to think of the poor murderess, who had been neglected all this time, and now

lay in a ſwoon, the convulſions having gone off, as her ſtrength failed.

On hearing her name mentioned, his lordſhip, to ſhew his Chriſtian charity, and prove the ſincerity of the repentance and amendment which he vowed in caſe his life ſhould be mercifully ſpared, deſired that they would do ſomething for the unhappy creature, if ſhe was ſtill alive. This was ſufficient to attach their compaſſion and care. They anſwered with one voice, that it was a pity to let her periſh, without even attempting to ſave her, and praiſing his lordſhip's goodneſs, prepared to try ſome experiments upon her alſo, if only to do ſomething for their fee.

CHAP. XVI.

The recovery of the murderess opens a new ſcene. She clears up the myſtery, leſs to the ſatisfaction of the doctors than of their noble patient, who rewards her liberally for her good news; and ſends them off without their errand. Reflections on ſome genteel matters. Chrysal *changes his ſervice.*

THEIR practice upon this new ſubject, however, was cut ſhort by a ſucceſs more ſpeedy than they deſired; their firſt operation of bleeding, bringing her directly to herſelf.

As ſoon as ſhe perceived what had been done, and recovered ſtrength to ſpeak, 'Good God, (ſaid ſhe) what is the meaning of this? Who can have been ſo inhuman as to bleed me, when it is known to be ruin in my diſorder?

'In

'In your diſorder! (ſaid one of the doctors with a contemptuous frown) what diſorder? Have you not poiſoned yourſelf? and what is ſtill worſe, his lordſhip alſo; who now lies in the ſame deſperate condition with you, and has from his unmerited goodneſs directed us to take this care of you; though if we can ſave you from this death, it muſt be to ſuffer one more ignominious.'

'I poiſon myſelf! (interrupted ſhe, raiſing herſelf up in the bed) I poiſon his lordſhip! What can you mean by this? I underſtand you not; and am innocent even in thought, of any ſuch crime. Explain yourſelf therefore; and do not ſport with the miſery of a wretched creature, who has more real diſtreſſes than ſhe is able to bear, without the addition of imaginary guilt.'

This amazed them all. They ſtood looking at each other for ſome moments, wrapt in reflections not the moſt pleaſing, on the conſequences which might attend their precipitation in treating his lordſhip in the manner they had done, in caſe what ſhe ſaid ſhould prove true. At length, on her repeating her intreaties, one of them condeſcended to inform her of every thing that had paſſed, dwelling particularly on the deſperate condition his lordſhip had been in, and the various methods they had uſed to relieve him.

Weak and diſpirited as you muſt ſuppoſe her to have been, ſhe was ſcarce able to refrain from laughter at this account. 'A deſperate condition he muſt be in now indeed; (ſaid ſhe) whatever he was in before! but if you will give me leave to ſlip on my gown and go to him, I'll ſoon complete his cure.'

This was a ſtep ſo contrary to all rules of practice,

that they could not permit it. On the contrary, one of them obſerving the impropriety of liſtening to the ravings of a perſon, whoſe head muſt certainly be diſtracted by the effects of the poiſon, they all took the hint, and were actually going to hold her down by force, in order to proceed in their experiments upon her, which you may think would not have been the more merciful, for what ſhe had juſt ſaid.

But ſhe was delivered from this diſcipline, by the appearance of his lordſhip, who on one of his ſervants carrying him the pleaſing news of what ſhe ſaid, had found ſtrength enough to run to her, and throwing himſelf on the bed, 'O my deareſt girl? (exclaimed he, claſping his arms around her neck) am I not then a dead man? Tell me, tell me the truth, directly! am I not a dead man?'-----

His haggard looks, and the bandages and flannels in which he was wrapped all over, convinced her of the truth of what the doctors had told her he had ſuffered. Shocked at the thought, ſhe held up her hands in a ſupplicating poſture, and imploring his pardon for what ſhe had been the involuntary cauſe of, informed him that ſhe was ſubject to fits, which attacked her with double violence whenever ſhe drank to any exceſs, as his lordſhip had compelled her to do that night, much, he muſt have been ſenſible, againſt her inclination, had ſhe dared to refuſe him; and that when ſhe was in thoſe fits, which laſted till the effects of the liquor went off, ſhe was apt to rave, and ſpeak every extravagance and inconſiſtency that could come into a diſordered head.

The manner in which ſhe ſpoke left not the leaſt room for doubt. All his fears were inſtantly removed, his

his joy at which obliterated the remembrance of every thing he had ſuffered in mind and body, and he not only forgave her, but alſo made her an handſome preſent in recompence for her happy news.

But his doctors met with a very different treatment. He reviled them in the ſevereſt terms for their ignorance and preſumption in putting him to ſuch torture, and tearing his conſtitution by ſuch violent means, before they were certain of his ailment; and without permitting them to alledge in their vindication his aſſertions of what he felt, and intreaties not to leave any thing unattempted, that they thought might poſſibly relieve him, ordered them to be turned out of doors, without giving them a farthing for all their trouble.

I have ſeen that you were ſurprized at his lordſhip's indelicacy, and diſregard to his health, in having an amour with a creature in ſo low a ſtate of infamy and wretchedneſs, as to walk the ſtreet to offer herſelf to caſual proſtitution; as well as at her expreſſing herſelf in a manner ſo much above her appearance and circumſtances. But the leaſt acquaintance with the world would eaſily account for both.

When once a woman falls from chaſtity, the characteriſtic virtue of her ſex, the deſcent to this loweſt degree of human miſery is natural, and ſeldom, very ſeldom, fails to come of courſe. The kept miſtreſs, who this day ſhines in brocade and jewels, and rattles about in her chariot, will in a few months ſpend the night in the ſtreets for want of an habitation to hide her head, and without cloaths to ſhelter her from the inclemencies of the weather, when the novelty that firſt recommended her is worn off; for no proſperity that is not eſtabliſhed on virtue can laſt. Theirs indeed is of all the

moſt

moſt fleeting; the vice which is their ſupport affecting their own conduct by example, and making them laviſh profuſely, what they get from profuſion.

Such had been the caſe of this female. She had been entitled by birth and education to better hopes; but vice had blaſted all, and left her only the reflection of what ſhe might have been, to aggravate her preſent wretchedneſs.

As to him! his health poſſibly was in a ſtate not worthy of regard! and for his delicacy, the indiſcriminate vague intercourſe of the ſexes effectually deſtroys that, as well as the ſentimental attachment, which refines the deſire of rational beings, and diſtinguiſhes it from the groſs appetite of brute animals, ſo that in general nothing farther than the gratification of that appetite is now ſought; and as that can be affected by any one object, as well as another, whether it is found in a palace or a brothel makes no difference, with thoſe who profeſs themſelves men of pleaſure. The ſex is all they ſeek, without regard to any qualifications; and conſequently, when their appetites are gratified, they deſert the objects of them with the ſame indifference as they took them.

But to return to my maſter. It was ſome time, as you may imagine, before he recovered the effects of this affair; but I remained not with him ſo long. The doctors, in revenge for the treatment they had met with, blazed it abroad, with the addition of every ridiculous circumſtance they could invent. This brought all his acquaintances to have a laugh at him upon the occaſion; to one of whom he loſt me that afternoon on a bett, at a race, between two of the maggots, which they found in the nuts they cracked after dinner.

CHAP.

CHAP. XVII.

CHRYSAL's maſter goes to be admitted into an extraordinary ſociety. Some reflections not ſuited to the taſte of the times. Riſe of this ſociety. A deſcription of a monaſtery, with an account of its members, and of ſome of its rules.

THE next morning after I came into the poſſeſſion of my new maſter, he ſet out upon a party of pleaſure of a moſt extraordinary nature. This was to be admitted into a ſociety, formed of a number of perſons of the firſt diſtinction, in burleſque imitation of the religious ſocieties which are inſtituted in other countries.

I have already told you, that I ſhall not give any opinion in religious matters. But whether the original inſtitution of ſuch ſocieties was right or not, as the motive of them was the worſhip of the Deity, any attempt to turn them into ridicule moſt certainly muſt be wrong; the mind of man ſeldom being acute or attentive enough to diſtinguiſh between matters, which to appearance are ſo intimately connected as the mode of worſhip, and the object of it! but generally involving either in the diſregard affecting the other. In the preſent inſtance indeed, the diſregard was deſignedly levelled at both alike.

To give you a proper notion of the ſcene in which my maſter was going to act a capital part, it is neceſſary to trace the whole from its original.

A perſon of a flighty imagination, and who poſſeſſed a fortune that enabled him to purſue thoſe flights, cloyed with common pleaſures, and ambitious of diſtinguiſh-

ing

ing himſelf among his companions, and reſolved to try if he could not ſtrike out ſomething new, that ſhould at the ſame time pleaſe his own taſte, and do honour to his genius.

The mere gratifications of ſenſe, in their utmoſt extent, not anſwering his deſign, he had recourſe to the aſſiſtance of imagination to enhance them. The great butt, againſt which men of pleaſure play off all their wit, is Religion. Their reaſons, for a practice ſo groſs, are obvious. As the voice of conſcience will ſometimes intrude upon them, ſo as to pall their higheſt pleaſures, in the very moment of enjoyment, their firſt endeavour is to ſilence it, which they find by experience cannot be done ſo effectually by any other method, as this of taking off the reſpect paid to Religion, from which conſcience borrows the terrors, that make its admonitions ſo unwelcome. Beſide, they think it ſhews their ſuperiority over the reſt of mankind, to laugh at what they are afraid of; as it is alſo convenient for their character of wit, to exert it on topics, where it is ſafe from being rivalled by men of real underſtanding.

Theſe weighty conſiderations determined him to ſeaſon his ſcheme as high as he could with impiety, in order to make it be the better reliſhed. Accordingly, after due deliberation on a matter of ſuch moment, he at length hit upon a plan that pleaſed him.

In the middle of a large lake upon his eſtate there was an iſland, the natural beauties of whoſe ſituation had been heightened by every improvement of art. On this iſland he erected a building exactly on the model of the monaſteries, which he had ſeen in other countries; and to make the reſemblance complete, there was not a vice, that he had ever heard imputed to the inhabitants of

of them, for practiſing which he did not make proviſion in his. The cellars were ſtored with the choiceſt wines; the larders with the delicacies of every climate, and the cells were fitted up for all the purpoſes of laſciviouſneſs, for which proper objects were alſo provided.

Thus far the ridicule, however criminal in itſelf, may ſeem to have been deſigned only againſt thoſe ſocieties of human inſtitution: But it was beneath his genius and ſpirit to ſtop here. Nothing leſs would ſatisfy him, than to attack the very eſſentials of the Religion eſtabliſhed by the laws of his country, and acknowledged by every ſerious perſon in it, to be divine.

For this pious purpoſe, when every thing was prepared for their reception, his next care was to find a fraternity proper for the place. But in this, his rank and courſe of life made him not long at a loſs. He ſelected from among his intimates a number equal to that of thoſe who had been at the firſt choſen to inculcate the Religion which he deſigned to ridicule, whoſe names they aſſumed, as he with equal modeſty and piety did that of the divine author of it: And to ſupply any decreaſe in this number by death, or deſertion from the terrors of reflection, he inſtituted an inferior order of as many more, choſen alſo with the greateſt caution and regard to the latitude of their principles, their fortunes and mirthful accompliſhments.

The probationary office of theſe latter was to attend upon their ſuperiors in the celebration of their myſteries, which were all performed in the chapel of the monaſtery, where no other ſervants were ever permitted to enter, on the moſt common occaſion, as the very decorations of it would in a great meaſure have betrayed their

their ſecrets, the ceiling being covered with emblems and devices too groſs to require explanation to the meaneſt capacity; and the walls painted with the portraits of thoſe whoſe names and characters they aſſumed, repreſented in attitudes and actions, horrible to imagination.

Nor was their care to keep their myſteries impenetrably ſecret confined to this excluſion of common ſervants. The diffidence of conſcious guilt made them even diſtruſt each other, till bound to ſecrecy by oaths and imprecations, receiving their force from the Religion thus abuſed by them: An abſurdity common among men aſſociated for the moſt flagitious purpoſes.

But ſtrong as the power of ſuperſtition is over weak and wicked minds, (for nothing but the groſſeſt ſuperſtition could make them think oaths in ſuch circumſtance binding!) their ſecrecy was ſecured by a ſtill ſtronger motive, which was fear.

They were ſenſible that even ſuſpicion of ſuch vices would for ever exclude them from the ſociety of all thoſe, whom in deſpite of themſelves, they could not help holding in reſpect; and that ſo outrageous an inſult upon the laws was liable to puniſhment from the ſecular power, though they might by their intereſt evade the direct effects of which, yet the imputation would make them ſo obnoxious to the people in general, that they could no longer hope to enjoy any of the lucrative employments of the ſtate, if their reſentment did not ariſe ſtill higher, and make them take that puniſhment into their own hands! and theſe fears prevented the ſecrets from being divulged even by ſuch as had reſolution enough to deſert the ſociety; as they imagined the ſtain

could never be ſo effectually expunged, as to ſecure them from thoſe conſequences.

The rites of this ſociety, and the ceremonies obſerved upon admiſſion into it, will be beſt explained by the account of what I ſaw my maſter perform on this occaſion, when he was a candidate for the higher order, having already ſerved his noviciate in the lower.

CHAP. XVIII.

CHRYSAL's maſter arrives at the monaſtery. The manner of his being admitted into the ſociety. Character of his competitor. The method he took to revenge the ſociety's injuſtice in preferring CHRYSAL's *maſter to him. The mirth of the company diſturbed by the entrance of* THE DEVIL, *juſt as he was invoked by* CHRYSAL's *maſter. The effect of ſuch a viſitor upon the company. The* DEVIL *fixes upon* CHRYSAL's *maſter in particular, and makes him ſqueak.*

IT was about four o'clock in the afternoon when my maſter arrived at the verge of the lake, where he no ſooner made the concerted ſignal, than a boat was ſent to ferry him over.

On his landing in the iſland, he went to the monaſtery, where he found the ſociety juſt ſitting down to dinner, at which he took his place among them. When they had made a ſhort meal, and drank their ſpirits up to a proper pitch, they retired to their reſpective cells, to prepare for the ſolemnity they were going to celebrate. My maſter then clad in a milk white robe of the fineſt linen, that flowed looſely round, repaired at

the tolling of a bell to the chapel, the ſcene of all their myſterious rites, and knocking gently thrice at the door, it was opened to him, to the ſound of ſoft and ſolemn muſic.

On his entrance he made a moſt profound obeiſance, and advancing ſlowly towards a table that ſtood againſt the wall, in the upper end of the chapel, as ſoon as he came to the rails, by which it was ſurrounded, he fell upon his knees, and making a profeſſion of his principles, nearly in the words, but with the moſt groſs perverſion of the ſenſe of the articles of faith of the religion eſtabliſhed in the country, demanded admiſſion within the rails, the peculiar ſtation of the upper order, where the ſuperior and eleven of the fraternity (the twelfth place was vacant, and now to be filled up) ſtood arrayed in the habits of thoſe, whoſe names and characters they profaned by their aſſumption.

When he had finiſhed, another candidate advanced in the like manner, and making his profeſſion alſo preferred the ſame claim; as there was more who had a right to do, but diſcouraged by the ſuperior merit of theſe two, they had declined their pretenſions for this time.

The brotherhood having heard the competitors with attention, retired to the table, and kneeling around it, the ſuperior repeated a prayer, in the ſame ſtrain and manner with the profeſſion of the candidates, to the Being whom they ſerved to direct their choice to him of the two moſt worthy of his ſervice.

The ſuperior then proceeded to take the ſuffrages of the reſt, with the ſame mimic ſolemnity; when my maſter being found to have the majority, his election was exultingly attributed to immediate inſpiration, and he

was

was accordingly admitted within the rails, where he received the name and character which he was to bear in the ſociety, in a manner not proper to be deſcribed, every the moſt ſacred rite and ceremony of Religion being profaned, all the prayers and hymns of praiſe appointed for the worſhip of the Deity burleſqued by a perverſion to the horrid occaſion.

In this manner the evening was waſted till ſupper-time, when they ſat down to a banquet in the chapel, in honour of the occaſion, at which nothing that the moſt refined luxury, the moſt laſcivious imagination could ſuggeſt to kindle looſe deſire, and provoke and gratify appetite was wanting; both the ſuperiors, and the inferiors, (who were permitted to take their places at the lower end of the table, as ſoon as they had ſerved in the banquet) vying with each other in looſe ſongs and diſſertations of ſuch groſs lewdneſs and daring impiety, as deſpair may be ſuppoſed to dictate to the damn'd, in both which my maſter ſhone ſo unrival'd as to bear down the ſuperior ſprightlineſs, wit, and humour of all the reſt; and compenſate for the want of every companionable merit.

But while they were in the height of their feſtivity, an affair happened that interrupted it for a time, and ſhewed their reſolution, particularly that of my maſter, in a proper light.

The perſon, who had that day been his competitor for the honour of admiſſion into the higher order of the ſociety, poſſeſſed the qualifications, which he wanted, in the moſt eminent degree. He had ſuch a flow of ſpirits, that it was impoſſible ever to be a moment dull in his company. His wit gave charms to every ſubject he ſpoke upon; and his humour diſplayed

the foibles of mankind in ſuch colours, as to put even folly out of countenance.

But the ſame vanity which had firſt made him ambitious of entering into this ſociety, only becauſe it was compoſed of perſons of a rank ſuperior to his own in life, and ſtill kept him in it, tho' upon acquaintance he deſpiſed themſelves, ſullied all theſe advantages. His ſpirits were often ſtretched to extravagance to overpower competition. His humour was debaſed into buffoonery; and his wit was ſo proſtituted to the luſt of applauſe, that he would ſacrifice his beſt friend for a ſcurvy jeſt; and wound the heart of him, whom he would at that very moment hazard his life and fortune to ſerve, only to raiſe a laugh; in which he was alſo aſſiſted by a peculiar archneſs of diſpoſition, and unlucky expertneſs at carrying his jeſts into practice, as he proved upon this occaſion.

Though he diſdained to decline the late competition, as the others did, he had been well aware that my maſter's higher rank in life would carry the point in diſpute againſt him; for which injuſtice he reſolved to revenge himſelf in the moſt ſignal manner.

For this purpoſe he had contrived the night before to bring into his cell a great Baboon which he had provided for the occaſion. When the brotherhood retired to their cells after dinner, as I have told you, to prepare for the ceremony, he availed himſelf of the office of keeper of the chapel, which he then filled, to convey this creature, dreſſed up in the fantaſtic garb, in which childiſh imagination cloath devils, into the chapel, where he ſhut him up in a large cheſt that ſtood there to hold the ornaments and utenſils of the table, when the ſociety was away. To the ſpring of the lock of this cheſt

cheſt he faſtened a cord, which he drew under the carpet that was on the floor to his own ſeat, and there brought the end of it through a hole, made for the purpoſe, in ſuch a manner that he could readily find it; and by giving it a pull, open the cheſt, and let the Baboon looſe whenever he pleaſed, without being perceived by any of the reſt of the company.

Accordingly, when they were all in the height of their mirth, on my maſter's kneeling down, and with hands and eyes raiſed towards Heaven, repeating an invocation in the perverted phraſe of Holy Writ, to the Being whom they ſerved to come among them, and receive their adorations in perſon, he pulled the cord, and let the animal looſe; who, glad to be delivered from his confinement, gave a ſudden ſpring upon the middle of the table.

The effect which the ſight of ſuch a viſitor had upon them, may be better conceived than expreſſed. Their attention had been ſo fixed upon what my maſter was ſaying, that they perceived not from whence he came; and his appearing ſo critically at the invocation, and in ſuch a ſhape, made them conclude he was the Being invoked.

Terrified out of their ſenſes by this thought, they all roared out with one voice, The Devil! The Devil! and ſtarting from their ſeats made directly toward the door, tumbling over one another, and over-ſetting every thing in their way.

In the height of this uproar and confuſion, the Baboon frighted at the effects of their fear, happened to leap upon my maſter's ſhoulders, as he lay ſprawling on the floor, who turning about his head and feeling the ſhock, ſaw the animal grinning horribly at him, and

cluded the Devil had obeyed his ſummons in good earneſt, and come to carry him bodily away.

Driven as he was to deſpair by this thought, he ſtrove however, in the inſtinctive impulſe of ſelf-preſervation, to ſhake off the invader: but he, inſtead of loſing his hold, on his repeated efforts, only clung to him the cloſer, claſping his paws around his neck, and chattering with ſpight at his ear. This completed the caitiff's diſtreſs. Every ſhadow of ſpirit failed him, and conſcious guilt ſuggeſting to him the meaning of this unintelligible jargon, he attempted in the blindneſs of his fear to move the very Devil to pity, by his pathetic wailings and ſupplications.

'Spare me, gracious Devil! (ſaid he) ſpare a wretch, who never was ſincerely your ſervant! I ſinned only from vanity of being in the faſhion! thou knoweſt I never have been half ſo wicked as I pretended; I never have been able to commit the thouſandth part of the vices which I have boaſted of. Take not then the advantage of that vanity; but judge me only from my actions. I knew not that thou wouldſt have come, or I ſhould never have invoked thee! leave me therefore, and go to thoſe who are more truly devoted to thy ſervice. I am but half a ſinner. My conſcience always flew in my face when I committed any crime! my heart gave the lie to my tongue, when I gloried in my vices; and I trembled at the damnation I affected to brave! O ſpare me therefore, at leaſt for this time, till I have ſerved thee better. I am as yet but half a ſinner.'

CHAP.

CHAP. XIX.

The DEVIL *is degraded to a* BABOON, *and his appearance well accounted for, which reſtores the mirth and courage of the company, and particularly of* CHRYSAL'S *maſter, who exerts himſelf to recover his character. The appearance of the be-deviled* BABOON *is traced next day to his introducer, who, at the inſtance of* CHRYSAL'S *maſter, is expelled the ſociety for preſuming to ridicule their rights. Farther conſequences of this affair make the ſuperior break up his monaſtery, and build a church.*

WHILE my maſter was making this eſſay of his eloquence upon the Baboon, the perſon who had brought him there took the opportunity of the conſternation the whole company was in, to open one of the windows unperceived by them for the animal to make his eſcape, which he no ſooner ſaw, than he made directly to it, giving my maſter an happy releaſe.

Before he could get clear off though, one of the company, who was bolder than the reſt, having maſtered reſolution to raiſe his head, got a full view of him, and perceiving what he was, juſt as my maſter concluded his ſupplication, 'Your prayers are heard! (ſaid he, ſtarting up and ſpeaking as ſoon as a burſt of laughter gave him utterance) your prayers are heard for this time; and that Devil of a great He-baboon, that's juſt gone out of the window, deſpiſing half a ſinner, has ſpared you till you are fitter for his ſervice.'—

At hearing theſe words, they all aroſe from the floor,

floor, where they had lain ſprawling on top of one another, and looking in amazement at him who had ſpoke to them; 'Courage, my friends! (ſaid he) this is but a falſe alarm! our maſter is not ſo ready to come for us when we call him, or we ſhould none of us all be here now. How a Baboon though ſhould come here to ſcar us out of our little wits in ſuch a manner, the Devil may tell you, if he will, for I cannot; but I'll ſwear I ſaw one go out of that window.'——

'And I'll ſwear too, that I ſaw him come in at it; (replied the author of the miſchief, who ſaw no way to eſcape detection, but by preventing farther enquiry by this bold lie) as I juſt then happened to look about to ſee from whence the wind came, that blew upon my poll.'——

This eclaircifſement ſatisfied them all! they inſtantly ſet the room to rights, and plaſtering up their broken ſhins and noſes, ſat down to conclude their carouſal, reſuming their former ſtrain, in which they all exerted themſelves in an uncommon manner, to wipe off the diſgrace of their late ſqueaking, particularly my maſter, who out-did his uſual out-doing in profaneneſs, blaſphemy, and wickedneſs of every kind, to recover his character, and to convince them he was more than half a ſinner.

They held in this hand, till nature ſunk under the fatigue, when they retired to ſleep off their debauch in their cells; where, as I ſaid, proper proviſion had been made for them, to reduce the theory of the day into practice, in the intervals of reſt.

Though the affair of the Baboon had paſſed off ſo cleverly, while their ſpirits were in ſuch a flurry, when they came to enquire more coolly into it next day, the whole

whole trick came out. It had been impoſſible to convey him into the monaſtery, without the privity of ſome of the ſervants, who had all ſo often felt the jeſts of this gentleman, that they were glad of an opportunity of being revenged upon him now, by making the diſcovery.

This account, confirmed by ſome circumſtances in his behaviour, which they had not attended to at the time, plainly pointing out the guilty perſon, the ſuperiors adjourned directly to the chapel to conſult how they ſhould proceed on ſo delicate an occaſion. For though they had always highly approved of ſuch wit, when practiſed upon others, they looked upon the application of it to themſelves in the moſt heinous light, eſpecially in ſuch an inſtance as this, the conſequences of which had expoſed them to the contempt of each other, by detecting their weakneſs, and ſhewing that the guilt in which they gloried was only feigned.

Mortifying as this was to their vanity, he thought however, that the caſe was general, afforded them ſome conſolation. However to remedy the effect of this, and prevent a repetition of the like diſgrace, it was propoſed, after mature deliberation, and much learned argument on the queſtion, to bury what was paſt, by a ſolemn act of amneſty, and make a ſpecial law, whoſe obſervation ſhould be enforced by an oath, that no member ſhould ever after preſume to attempt exerciſing his wit upon the ſociety, in any manner, or by any means whatſoever; on taking which oath, and aſking pardon upon his knees, at the door of the chapel, the offender ſhould be forgiven.

To this propoſal they all aſſented, except my maſter, who for private reaſons thought the latter part of it much

much too mild for ſo flagrant a crime. He had long cheriſhed a ſecret grudge againſt the other, who not only often pointed his wit againſt him, in a manner that he could not digeſt, nor knew how to reſent, it being as polite as it was keen, but alſo put him conſtantly to the expence of double wickedneſs, the only qualification in which he could poſſibly ſhine, to avoid being totally eclipſed by him: His deſire of revenge alſo was ſtrongeſt on this occaſion, as he had ſuffered the deepeſt diſgrace.

Accordingly he exerted all his eloquence, to ſhew the enormity of the crime of attempting to turn any of the rites and ceremonies eſtabliſhed by the laws of the ſociety into ridicule; the letting of which eſcape without adequate puniſhment, he ſaid, would argue weakneſs and want of ſpirit in them, and muſt end in the ruin of their authority; for which weighty reaſons he propoſed that the offender ſhould be directly expelled the ſociety in form, as the only effectual way to vindicate their dignity, and prevent others from offering it the like inſult for the future.

This gave the affair a new turn. They all took fire at the thought of their dignity's being inſulted, and expelled him that moment, without even waiting to hear him in his own defence. But he ſoon had the ſatisfaction of ſeeing himſelf amply avenged.

The care they took to keep every thing they did ſecret, had long awoke the curioſity of the neighbourhood, who were the more ſevere in their gueſſes, the leſs able they were to gueſs right. But the affair of the Baboon, whom the ſervants got ſight of, before he could be caught, and whether miſled by his dreſs, or miſrepreſenting by deſign, gave out to be the Devil, was

was no ſooner known, than a formal ſtory was propagated over the whole country, that the end of their meeting was to worſhip the Devil, to whom this chapel was dedicated, and who had often been ſeen among them in variety of ſhapes

Scandal always meets eaſy credit. The ſtory was believed by many, and repeated by more as if they believed it, never loſing any thing in the repetition; till ſuch an univerſal alarm was raiſed among the people (who are content to infringe the precepts of Religion, without denying its authority) that the ſuperior, whoſe ſeat was in the neighbourhood, found it neceſſary to diſſolve the ſociety, and effacing every trace of it, convert the building to the better uſe of a pleaſure houſe, in which he entertained all his neighbours in general, whenever he was in the country: Beſide which, he alſo built a church on an eminence near his houſe, that anſwered the double purpoſe, of convincing the populace of his regard to Religion, and of making a beautiful termination to a viſta, which he had juſt cut thro' a wood, in his park.

I have anticipated theſe circumſtances to ſatisfy your curioſity; as I have alſo omitted many, and ſoftened more particulars in this account, which were too horrid to have been repreſented in their proper colours.

CHAP.

CHAP. XX.

A further account of the rules of the convent; with ſome ſtriking inſtances of oeconomy. A ſeeming inconſiſtency accounted for, from a principle not ſufficiently underſtood. Some remarkable effects of vanity. Reaſon of the abuſe of wealth.

YOU are aſtoniſhed how ſuch ſcenes of debauchery and exceſs could be ſupported, either by the fortune of the entertainer, or the conſtitutions of his gueſts; but this ſhall be explained.

To prevent ſatiety or fatigues, theſe meetings were never protracted beyond a week at a time; nor held oftener than twice in a year; by which frugality of pleaſure, they were always returned to with the keenneſs of novelty: and as for the expence of them, that was defrayed jointly by the whole community; (the ſuperior contributing nothing more than any other member, except the firſt coſt of building the convent, which he thought himſelf amply recompenſed for, by the honour of having ſtruck out the plan;) and regulated by the ſtricteſt œconomy; the ſlaves of their luſts being ſent back to the brothels from whence they had been brought, and the ſervants of their luxury diſcharged, at the end of every meeting; and no more retained for the reſt of the year, than an old man and woman who took care of the place.

To you who have ſupported the dignity of your nature, by preferring the pleaſures of that reaſon which was given to diſtinguiſh man from brutes, to thoſe of ſenſe which they enjoy in common with him, the pic-

ture of this whole ſcene muſt appear over-charged and irreconcileable with the great principles of human action, which always propoſe ſome good, either preſent or future, however the judgment may err in the thing propoſed. But more acquaintance with life would ſolve this difficulty to you.

The general motive for attempting to turn Religion into ridicule has been already explained. But as ſome are ſeen to give into this practice, who ſeem to cultivate their reaſon with moſt ſucceſs; and whoſe actions, and even inclinations, appear not to have the remoteſt tendency contrary to moral virtue, it may be proper to account for ſuch an exception.

The firſt principle of action, impreſſed by nature on every thing that lives, is ſelf-preſervation. From this brute animals, which by neceſſity proceed regularly in the courſe preſcribed for them, never ſwerve: But the rational animal, man, bewildered in his own imaginations, by the abuſe of that liberty, which was given him to enhance the merit of his obedience to the dictates of reaſon, often ſubſtitutes another in its place, by whoſe impulſe he acts in direct oppoſition to it.

This is vanity; the real ſource of that ambition, which courts danger, and plunges with open eyes into deſtruction, however ſpeciouſly it may be diſguiſed under the pompous titles of love of glory, and regard to the public good, as well as of moſt of the extravagancies and abſurdities which puzzle ſuperficial obſervers, and make them preſumptuouſly impeach as a defect in the work of nature, their own neglect and perverſion of its laws.

A particular enquiry into the effects of this ſuppoſitious principle, many of which, as I ſaid, are blazoned

as the brighteſt virtues, while more are acknowledged to be the moſt atrocious crimes; or how nearly ſuch virtues and crimes, proceeding thus from the ſame ſource, may be allied, though curious and intereſting in itſelf, is not neceſſary here. It is ſufficient to obſerve that its power is able to break the force of habit, reconcile contradictions, and confound the eſſential difference of things; to cope with prejudice, and over-rule the infirmities of nature.

This it is, for inſtance, that makes the conſtitutional coward, who trembles at the thought of danger, and would ſee his country ruined, rather than draw his ſword in its defence, fight duels for a doubtful punctilio of empty ceremony; the ſuperſtitious wretch, who finds omens, in ſpilled ſalt, and croſſed ſtraws, and ſee Goblins and Devils in the dark, profeſs infidelity, ridicule Providence, and dare the wrath of Heaven, by inſults and bravadoes; and laſtly, this it is, that makes the hoary Sage, whoſe life has been regulated by the ſtricteſt principles of morality and religion, while paſſion might have rebelled againſt them, commence Libertine in the impotence of old age, and glory in vices he has loſt the power to practiſe. Of the juſtice of theſe remarks the members of this ſociety, of which vanity was the cement, as it hath been the origin, afforded the moſt glaring proofs.

You wonder what there could be to be vain of, in ſuch an aſſociation! but you do not reflect, that vanity is never the reſult of real worth. The falſe glare of public eſtimation reflects it from the vileſt and moſt reproachful objects.

The inſtitutor of this ſociety was admired for every polite accompliſhment, every power of pleaſing in converſation;

verſation; and the firſt ſet he choſe were all of the ſame caſt. This with their rank and fortunes, and above all the myſtery of the inſtitution, which ſet curioſity on fire, and gave imagination room to form the moſt flattering ideas of it, made admiſſion into it an object of univerſal ambition, as it ſeemed a proof of every member's meriting the ſame character; and when once admitted, a vicious fear of ridicule made too many aſhamed to quit it; and even they, who did, were precluded from diſcovering any thing that might deter others by the ſecrecy to which they were ſworn.

There is one thing more which, from the particular circumſtances of your own life, affects you more than any other, in this account. This is the folly and ingratitude of laviſhing the bleſſing of wealth to the diſhonour of the donor; and with ſo little regard to its real uſe. But this, as has been the caſe in other inſtances, proceeds from want of better acquaintance with life.

It has been remarked by travellers, that in thoſe parts of the earth, where the bleſſings of nature are beſtowed with greateſt liberality, the people ſeem leaſt ſenſible of them; and are ſunk in the groſſeſt vice; as if reaſon and virtue were incompatible with the good things of this world.

The reaſon of this remark holds with reſpect to wealth in other countries. Provided to profuſion with every thing they want, the rich look no farther than to the gratification of their appetites and paſſions; as the means to procure which are in their poſſeſſion, they acknowledge no obligation to the power which firſt gave, and ſtill preſerves the enjoyment of them: but on the contrary, affect to ſhew their independence,

by proſtituting it to purpoſes, directly contrary to his declared pleaſure; and this cauſes that abuſe of wealth, which generally mars the bleſſing, and makes the gift of it ſo dangerous.

CHAP. XXI.

Account of the members of the ſociety. The hiſtory of the ſuperior. The particular qualifications by which he aroſe in life. Succeſs in a private inſtance encourages him to try his talents, in a higher ſphere, from which he ſoon deſcends with diſgrace. A ſtriking inconſiſtency in his character.

I SEE you deſire to have ſome account of the ſeveral members of ſo extraordinary a ſociety. When the great lines which diſtinguiſh the characters of mankind are marked by virtues, or even by ſuperior abilities, that dazzle ſuperficial obſervation, by the ſplendor of their effects, and paſs for ſuch, however different in the tendency of their exertions; the delineation affords pleaſure; but on the contrary, where thoſe lines are all diſtorted by vice and folly, and diſtinguiſhed from each other only by different modes and degrees of them, the contemplation is a pain; and to paint them a taſk ſo diſagreeable, that nothing but an impartial regard to truth could make it be undertaken. However your curioſity ſhall be gratified.

As the convent was dedicated to pleaſure; you may imagine that play made a part of their entertainment. Contrary indeed to the ſcheme of all other parties of pleaſure, it was not the firſt object of their meeting; and only ſerved to fill up the intervals between other pleaſures, which nature without ſome reſpite could not ſupport

ſupport in ſuch exceſs. The circulation however, even in this piddling for mere amuſement, gave me an opportunity of taking a view of all their characters; ſuch of which as contained any thing worthy of your notice, for you muſt not expect it from them all, I will give you ſome general ſketches of.

As the looks of a man are generally a comment on his heart, I will place the whole company in your view, as I have done on other occaſions, to aſſiſt you in forming a proper notion of their characters. At the head of the table ſits the ſuperior. You ſee every eye is expreſſively fixed upon him, in admiration at the vivacity, humour, and wit on all he ſays, while by an art peculiarly happy, he alone ſeems unconſcious of his own pre-eminence.

Theſe talents, which from the intoxication of preſent applauſe, are much oftener of prejudice than advantage to the poſſeſſor, by diverting from more ſolid purſuits, proved the foundation of his exalted rank and fortune; becauſe always directed by the deepeſt and moſt delicate addreſs.

The firſt inſtance, in which this addreſs was diſplayed, was in his own family. He had a diſtant relation who had ſpent his youth in ſuch buſy ſcenes, as left not time for his imagination to wander in ſearch of amuſement. To a mind accuſtomed to be wound up to ſuch a pitch, the charms of a converſation like his were relaxation, irreſiſtibly engaging. He inſinuated himſelf inſenſibly into his favour, and by ſeeming to have nothing in view, but his pleaſure, led him as he pleaſed himſelf, not only into all the lengths of his own libertiniſm, ſo as to be a member of this ſociety, when the decline of life, at leaſt, ſhould have ſuggeſted

more ſerious thoughts; but alſo at his death, to reward his complaiſance with a much larger portion of his fortune, than he had any claim to from conſanguinity or the preference of reaſon.

Such ſucceſs encouraged his ambition to higher attempts. Introduced by the ſame qualifications to the acquaintance of the great, he not only gained their favour by them, but alſo impoſed them upon them for abilities of an higher claſs ſo far, that being ſecure of his ſubſerviency to their deſigns, they admitted him to a ſhare of their power.

But in this he had deceived himſelf as well as them, as he found to their diſappointment and his own extreme confuſion, upon the very firſt trial of his political talents, when he ſhewed in the ſtrongeſt light the difference between the abilities requiſite to raiſe a laugh, and rule a nation.

He had ſenſe enough however to ſee his miſtake, before it had involved him in any conſequences, from which he could not recede without danger as well as diſgrace; and prudently ſacrificing his ambition to his ſafety, he turned off all with a laugh, and returned to the enjoyment of thoſe pleaſures for which nature ſeemed to have ſo particularly deſigned him. Whether that enjoyment is as ſincere and undiſturbed though, as ſhould appear from his looks and conduct, is a point not ſo certain, as you may be apt to imagine

The principles, on which this ſociety was originally inſtituted, and from which it has never deviated, the profeſſed ridicule of moral Virtue and Religion, ſhould ſeem to have proceeded from an utter diſbelief of a Deity; or at leaſt, a fearleſs defiance of his power; but contrary to this, there ſtarts not at his own ſhadow a

more

more abject ſlave to ſuperſtition, and all its fooliſh fears, than he was at the time of inſtituting it, and ſtill remains.

Such an inconſiſtence requires explanation to you whoſe notions of life are formed ſolely from rational ſpeculation.

CHAP. XXII.

Continuation of the hiſtory of the ſuperior. The inconſiſtency in his character accounted for. The reaſon of his being ſent early to travel for education. Political principles all neceſſary to be attended to, in a tutor. The method and effect of his tutor's care to inſtruct him in Religion. A frightful ſtory gives riſe to a frightful dream, which is interrupted ſtill more frightfully. A tremendous apparition terrifies him into a ſwoon. Account of an apparition.

THE political principles of his family being in avow'd oppoſition to their Sovereign, the earlieſt care was taken to inſtil the ſame into him; and the ripeneſs of his parts and genius flattered them with a promiſe of his future conſequence in the ſtate.

For this purpoſe, before reaſon ſhould have time to be convinced by experience of the injuſtice and danger of ſuch deſigns, he was ſent abroad to be educated in a country, where every object ſhould concur to prejudice him againſt the laws and conſtitution of his own, and the opportunity of perſonal intercourſe confirm his attachment to him, whoſe intereſt he was intended to promote.

The

The public conduct of his life has ſufficiently ſhewn the ſucceſs of this ſcheme: as an incidental circumſtance in the execution of it will alſo account for the inconſiſtencies in his private character.

The religious principles eſtabliſhed in the country whither he was thus ſent for education, and the political ones it was deſigned he ſhould aſſiſt to eſtabliſh at home, were ſo intimately and eſſentially connected, that it was impoſſible to find a tutor for him ſufficiently attached to the latter, to anſwer the purpoſe of his family, who was not alſo at leaſt ſecretly inclined to, even if he did not only profeſs the former.

But this made no difficulty. Religion is in reality the thing leaſt thought of, however pompouſly it may be profeſſed in political ſchemes. They ſcrupled not therefore to commit his tender mind to the influence of ſuch an one, regardleſs what impreſſions he might make upon it, beſide thoſe they deſired: An opportunity which he did not fail to take advantage of.

Accordingly as ſoon as the tutor and his pupil were ſettled in the place of their deſignation, the former began his deſign, by diſplaying on every occaſion the excellence and importance of the ceremonies and rites of the Religion profeſſed there, as the objects moſt likely to ſtrike the levity of youth, always complaining with a contemptuous concern of the want of ſuch in that of his own country; not chooſing to ſpeak more directly at firſt, for fear of giving him any alarm.

But artful as this method was, he had the diſappointment to ſee it did not ſucceed ſo well as he could wiſh. Though from the manner of his pupils earlieſt education, it was eaſy enough to ſink his own Religion in

in his opinion, yet ſome circumſtances rendered the raiſing of any other in its place, a matter of more difficulty, than might have been obviouſly apprehended. His natural turn and quickneſs of ridicule made him ſee every thing in the moſt diſadvantageous light, at the firſt glance, at the ſame time that his diſſipation and levity prevented his attending to the abſtruſer arguments, often neceſſary to eſtabliſh the credit of matters of ſuch importance beyond the reach of rational doubt; ſo that all the pains his tutor was piouſly taking to enlarge his faith, threatened to work the contrary effect, of making him an infidel.

Alarmed at this, the tutor, whoſe biggotted credulity had ſwallowed every fiction of ſuperſtition, had always ſome miraculous ſtory of a judgment or apparition ready to refute the ſcoffs of his pupil, and confirm the truth of whatever he himſelf advanced. The conſtant repetition of ſuch tales, which he plainly ſhowed his own belief of, inſenſibly made ſuch an impreſſion on his pupil's imagination, as perſuaded him of their poſſibility at leaſt, if he was not abſolutely convinced of the truth of every thing in proof of which they were alledged; and filled him with fears, for which a good foundation had before been laid in the nurſery.

When his mind was thus prepared to catch at every terror, his tutor took him one day to ſee the exhibition of one of thoſe miracles, which are ſaid to be wrought at the ſhrine of a conteſted ſaint; and which really weaken the credit of the Religion they were deviſed to ſupport.

The abſurdity was too ſtriking to eſcape his obſervation. He turned it into the moſt poignant ridicule, in ſpite of all his tutor's pains to defend it; who finding that

that his arguments had no effect, had recourſe to his uſual proof of an apparition, which he dreſſed up in every colour and circumſtance of horror, to make it have the greater weight.

His pupil took not more than uſual notice of the matter, while light and company diverted his thoughts; but when he went to bed, and found himſelf alone, and in the dark, the whole flaſhed upon him in all its terrors, heightened in every inſtance, by the livelineſs of his own imagination.

What he felt in ſuch a ſituation may eaſier be conceived than expreſſed. He covered up his head with the cloaths; and lay ſweating and trembling till his mind was wearied with dwelling on the ſame thoughts, and he ſunk into a kind of ſlumber.

But this was far from giving him relief. He was no ſooner aſleep, than imagination, now in her own empire, placed him in the midſt of the ſcene, which had juſt before been ſo elaborately deſcribed to him by his tutor, from the contemplation of which he was delivered only to ſuffer ſtill more ſeverely; being awakened by ſounds uncouth enough to ſtartle, at ſuch a time, the moſt reſolute mind unacquainted with them.

Such a continuation realized all the horrors of his dream. He ſtarted up; and turning in the inſtinctive curioſity of affright to that part of the room, from whence the ſounds ſtill continued to come, ſaw four glaring eye-balls fixed upon him, at the ſame time that a voice diſtinctly articulated, but in a tremendous tone and language which he did not underſtand, thundered directly in his ear.

The darkneſs, which prevented his ſeeing the bodies, to which thoſe eyes belonged, and his ignorance of the import

import of the ſounds, only added to his fright by giving room to imagination, not only to form the moſt horrible conceptions of them, but alſo to apprehend them ſtill more horrible than he could conceive. He was not able to ſupport ſuch an attack; but giving one helpleſs ſhriek, ſunk back in a ſwoon.

His tutor, who lay in the next room, and had been awakened by the ſame ſounds, but was not ſo much terrified at them, both becauſe his mind was not ſo well prepared for terrors, and that he was acquainted with their cauſe, heard him ſhriek, and knowing his voice, ran to him, imagining he was engaged in a conflict, in which he might want aſſiſtance, with the cats which he heard in his room: for from two of thoſe animals, which finding the window open, had choſen it for the ſcene of their amours, had thoſe dreadful ſounds proceeded.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXIII.

Continuation. Behaviour of the tutor on finding his pupil in a ſwoon. He recovers; and terrifies his tutor by miſtaking him for a ſaint. Charity begins at home. The tutor ſagaciouſly gueſſes at the meaning of the miſtake; and piouſly reſolves to improve it. The pupil's full and true account of the apparition, with the tutor's honeſt addition to it. His repentance, and converſion. His tutor moderates his zeal for weighty reaſons. He relapſes, and his tutor for private reaſons divulges the whole affair. The method he took to invalidate the ſtory.

YOU may judge how he was affected at ſeeing the perſon, upon whom all his hopes of wealth and preferment were founded, in ſuch a ſituation. Aukward at the beſt, he now knew not how to attempt giving him any aſſiſtance, nor had even the preſence of mind to call any one who could, ſo great was his embarraſment and confuſion. Nature however ſoon delivered him from his diſtreſs, and reſtored his hopes, by the recovery of his pupil.

As ſoon as he came a little to himſelf, he ſtared wildly round him for ſome moments, and then fixing his eyes upon his tutor, who ſtill ſtood gaping in amazement at him, he miſtook him, from his being in his ſhirt, for the Saint that ran in his head; his imagination ſtill continuing the former ſcene, and holding up his hands in a ſuppliant poſture, as he lay trembling on his back. O mercy, gracious Saint! (ſaid he) have mercy

mercy on my youth! never will I again preſume to ridicule any of the ſacred rites of Religion! never will I admit a doubt of any thing it commands me to believe! O mercy! mercy.'-----Saying which words he fainted away again.

This addreſs, one word of which the tutor did not underſtand, threw him into a fright almoſt as great as that of his pupil. He ſtood for ſome time ſtupified by aſtoniſhment, till the cold reminding him that he was in his ſhirt, care for his own health conquered every other concern, and made him go to put on his cloaths before he attempted to do any thing for the other.

While he was dreſſing himſelf, he conſidered what his pupil had ſaid, with rather more attention than his fear had permitted before, and recollecting the ſubject of their converſation the preceding evening, concluded that heaven had made uſe of ſome ſupernatural means to ſubdue his infidelity, the impreſſion of which remaining ſtill upon his mind, had occaſioned his miſtaking him in the manner he did, for a Saint; (for that he ſhould be terrified to that degree by the ſcreaming of the cats, never came into his head) and piouſly reſolved to contribute his aſſiſtance to the deception, by taking no notice that he had been with him before, or even denying it, if he ſaw occaſion.

With this intention, he returned to his pupil, determined though not to diſcloſe his ſuſpicion, till the other ſhould make ſome diſcovery to direct him more certainly how to proceed.

His pupil, who was juſt come to himſelf, knew him directly, now he was dreſſed, and catching his hand eagerly as ſoon as he came within his reach, 'O my

dearest, my best friend! (said he, pressing it to his lips) what have I suffered since I saw you? How dearly have I paid for the profaneness, and infidelity of which you have so often reproved me, with pious and paternal care. But never will I be guilty of the like again. I resign myself implicitly to your direction; and will from this hour believe every thing you require me.'——

His tutor, after giving him some spiritual comfort, and encouraging his perseverance in this pious resolution, desired to know what had been the happy occasion of it; to which the other answered, that some little time after he went to bed, the room was suddenly enlightened in a manner not to be described, when the apparition, of which he had given him an account the evening before, stood before him wrapped in blue flames, and breathing smoke and sulphur; and calling to him in a voice that appalled his soul, denounced Heaven's vengeance against his infidelity, which he was just going to put in execution, when the holy Saint, whose miracles he had so impiously turned into ridicule, appeared all robed in white, and circled round with glory; and interposing between him and the spectre, the latter gave a shriek that shook the room, and then vanished in a flame of fire; upon which the Saint turned to him with a look ineffably benign, and exhorting him to repentance, gave him his benediction, and disappeared.

Ready as his tutor was to believe every thing that exceeded belief, when alledged in the cause of Religion, the circumstance of his own having been mistaken for a Saint, staggered his faith in all the rest, and made him for once justly conclude, that the whole miracle

racle was no more than a fiction of that fear with which the ſcreaming of the cats ſtruck him in his ſleep, for he now plainly traced the effects of their voices.

However, far from undeceiving him, he improved upon the thought; and as ſoon as his pupil concluded his tale, with a grave face and ſolemn air added a ſequel to it, of equal truth, but dictated by a very different degree of veracity; the former being deceived himſelf, and having eked out the illuſions of his fear, as diſtracted imagination ſuggeſted to him; whereas the latter aggravated thoſe illuſions, by untruths premeditately deviſed to confirm that deception.

He ſaid, that grieved at the danger with which an unhappy prejudice of education threatened the ſpiritual ſafety of one ſo dear to him, inſtead of lying down to reſt, he had fallen upon his knees, and poured out his ſoul in prayer and ſupplication to Heaven, to enlighten his (pupil's) mind, and convince him of his errors, in which holy exerciſe he had continued ever ſince, till this moment, when in the impulſe of a perſuaſion, which he now perceived to have been divinely inſpired, that his prayers were heard, he came to ſatisfy himſelf of the reality of ſo miraculous an event, for which he begged him to join in returning immediate thanks to Heaven, and the bleſſed Saint, who had wrought it.

This completed the deception of his pupil, ſo far as to make him believe the truth of ſome parts of his own tale, which he was not altogether ſo certain of before. He aroſe, therefore, and reconciling himſelf to the faith of his tutor, by the ſtrongeſt and moſt full profeſſions, dedicated the remainder of the night with him to prayer and pious converſation.

In the first heat of his devotion, he was for making the whole affair public, and openly joining himself to that Religion, whose truth was thus confirmed to him. But his tutor moderated the fervency of his zeal, sensible that such a step would not only defeat the political designs of his friends, which must be carried on under a masque, and in whose success his own wishes were most warmly interested? but also overturn his own hopes of being well rewarded for the care of his education, by a church living of great revenue, that was in the gift of one of his pupil's relations, who had promised it to him, as soon as the incumbent, then sinking under all the infirmities of extreme old age, should die: For his religious principles never interfered with his interest.

For these most weighty reasons, though as you may imagine, he communicated only the former, he prevailed upon his convert to be content with the private practice, without the profession of his new faith, till he should in the fulness of time be so happy as to contribute his assistance to the great event, which should establish it in his own country.

Such an argument could not fail of effect upon one who found the fervour of his devotion cool so fast, that in a few days the whole matter was entirely reversed, and his practice as libertine as ever, though fear of seeing any more spectres restrained his professions within more decent bounds. For so deeply was the dread of them imprinted on his mind, that to this day he dares not to sleep by himself, or be a moment alone in the dark: Though his tutor soon after his return home divulged the whole affair, as far as it affected not himself, with the addition of many circumstances,

ſtances, if poſſible ſtill more contemptibly ridiculous than the true, to revenge his procuring the living for one of his raking companions, and ingratiate himſelf with a particular enemy of his, from whom he expected a recompence for ſo pleaſing a piece of ſcandal; to invalidate which was one of his pupil's motives for inſtituting this ſociety.

CHAP. XXIV.

Account of the members continued. Hiſtory of one who turned libertine in ſpeculation, after he had loſt the power of being ſo in practice. How this happened; the force of literary vanity; and the reaſon why it is ſtronger than any other. Inſtances of the advantages reaped from encouraging genius. A new method of flattery is ſucceſsful where all others had failed, and by a maſterſtroke makes vanity gain a ſignal triumph over virtue.

AT the right hand of the ſuperior you ſee one, whoſe example ſhould be a warning to mankind never to be off their guard againſt the allurements of vice, while there is any poſſibility, however remote and improbable, of their falling into it.

While youth might have been pleaded in excuſe of paſſion; and the buſy application of manhood extenuated any ſpeculative errors in opinion, his conduct had been regulated by the ſtricteſt regard to the principles of moral virtue, and the precepts of Religion. But in the evening of his days, when all that heat and hurry gave place to cool reflection, and the ſere-

nity of the proſpect more than compenſates for its approaching cloſe, the whole ſcene was wretchedly reverſed, and his ſetting ſun over-caſt, with a cloud of vices moſt blameable in any ſtage of life, but aggravated ten thouſand-fold in his, to which they were unnatural.

I have told you before that vanity was the cauſe of a fall, ſo reproachful to humanity: The manner though of its operating upon one, who ſeemed to be removed ſo far beyond its reach, is worthy of attention.

In no inſtance is the power of vanity ſo tyrannically exerted over the human heart, as when it ariſes from an opinion of literary merit. The reaſon is obvious. Real learning is the moſt effectual check to vanity, as it ſhews the inſtability of its foundation. When therefore any thing that makes pretence, however falſely, to that name, ſeems to adminiſter to its ſupport, it inſtantly looks upon itſelf as above controul.

Though early engagement in the activer ſcenes of his country's ſervice had prevented his making any great proficiency in the more abſtruſe purſuits of ſpeculation, his natural inclination to them, directed by a taſte formed by the beſt education, made him embrace all opportunities of patronizing every advance in ſcience and improvement in the finer arts.

The liberality with which he indulged this inclination ſoon marked him out to the attaeks of every needy adventurer in the trade of letters. Projectors conſulted him on their ſchemes. Poets ſubmitted their works to his correction. His virtues, among which munificence was never forgot, were the inexhauſted theme of panegyric; and dedications declared to the world his abilities and knowledge.

Adulation

Adulation ſo groſs was an affront to reaſon. He rejected with juſt contempt the praiſes to which he knew himſelf not entitled; and was ſuperior to the flattery, which compaſſion for the flatterer often made him ſeem to pay for. Happy had he always preſerved the ſame delicacy!

Among the crowds of paraſites, who lay in wait thus for his favour, was a perſon, whom idleneſs ſeduced to prefer this abject ſtate of dependence to the purſuit of a liberal profeſſion, which he had been bred to: A baſeneſs aggravated by his poſſeſſing every qualification neceſſary to have made him eminent in any ſtate.

This man, who had thoroughly ſtudied the human heart, ſoon ſaw that any direct attack upon his patron would prove ineffectual. He therefore ſtruck out a new ſcheme, the depth of which ſecur'd it from detection, though, at the ſame time, the difficulty of carrying it into execution would have diſcouraged any one, leſs anxious for ſucceſs, and confident of his own abilities. He diſguiſed the ſtrongeſt flattery under maſque of the moſt cynical bluntneſs, and candour; and inſtead of praiſing all he did, and echoing in aſſent every word he ſpoke, he miſſed no occaſion of differing in opinion with him, declaring he thought that being, who could debaſe the dignity of his nature ſo far as to give up his judgment to another, from any other motive than rational conviction, unworthy of the name of man.

A behaviour ſo ſingular, neceſſarily attracted the notice of his patron, as the manner in which it was carried on ſoon won his favour: For in all the debates of any moment, which this champion for liberty of thought held with him, he managed with ſuch delicate art, as to lead him (his patron) to confute him, though frequently

frequently contrary to the opinion with which he had originally ſet out: In trifles indeed, where being foiled could reflect no diſgrace, he proceeded not with that caution, but often gained a victory, for which he laughed at himſelf when it was won.

But with others he obſerved not ſuch moderation. Be the ſubject what it would, he exerted all his powers, (and great as I have ſaid they were) till he ſilenced at leaſt, if he could not convince his adverſary, over whom he then triumphed in all the inſolence of ſuperiority.

Such a method could not fail of ſucceſs! his patron, ſure of coming off with honour, ſought every opportunity of entering to debate with him, and contracted an eſteem for one who as he thought had thus diſcovered to him his own abilities, while every one elſe declined entering into a conteſt, which always involved them in diſgrace.

Encouraged by this ſucceſs, he boldly ventured upon a ſtroke, the event of which was to decide his hopes. In gratification to his own depraved taſte, he had written a treatiſe in which the groſſeſt libertiniſm was ſet in ſo advantageous and alluring a light, and the arguments againſt it evaded with ſo much plauſibility and true wit, as were almoſt ſufficient to put virtue out of countenance, and debauch its ſincereſt votaries.

The contradiction between ſuch principles, and the practice of his patron, through his whole life, would have deterred any one leſs enterprizing and experienced in the weakneſſes of human nature, from diſcloſing them; but he had lately made ſome diſcoveries, which emboldened him even to puſh his deſigns much farther, than owning himſelf the author of that book.

While

While the vigour of life had enabled his patron to perſiſt in buſier purſuits, he had deſpiſed the flattery paid to his literary merit; but as ſoon as the infirmities of age rendered him unfit for ſuch employment, he with a natural partiality gave the preference to that pre-eminence, which he thought ſtill within his reach, and affected to ſlight all fame that was not founded on the nobler labours of the mind.

This was a ſufficient direction to the paraſite. He immediately ſhewed his book with a myſterious air, to ſeveral of his patron's friends, giving them broad hints at the ſame time, but under the ſeal of ſecrecy, that he was the author of it. There is no way ſo effectual as this to ſpread any ſtory. One whiſpered it to another, till in a few days the whole town was in the ſecret.

The hints and illuſions which were every hour thrown out to the patron, on this occaſion, perplexed him not a little, as he knew not what they meant. A ſecret though in the poſſeſſion of ſo many could not poſſibly remain long ſuch to him. One of his acquaintances, provoked at the ſeeming affectation of his not underſtanding his hints, told him the whole affair.

Much as he was ſurpriſed at the account, vanity would not let him ſuppreſs it by a direct negative, as the book was mentioned in terms of the higheſt praiſe. He anſwered with the coy evaſions of modeſty, the moſt effectual affirmation, and ſhifted off any farther diſcuſſion of the ſubject, till he ſhould be better informed.

Accordingly the moment his friend left him, he ſent for the author of the report, and charging him with it, deſired to ſee the performance which he had done him the honour to father upon him.

The

'The paraſite, who took his cue from the looks of his patron, was far from denying the charge. He preſented him the book without heſitation; ſaying with his uſual bluntneſs, that if it was not actually written by him, it was literally written from him, being nothing but what he had frequently ſaid on thoſe ſubjects; and therefore might without any injuſtice be aſſerted to be his.

The advantageous manner in which the patron had heard the book ſpoken of prevented his making any reply till he ſhould have read it, when he was ſo ſtruck with the various beauties of it, that vanity ſubdued all his virtue, and deprived him of the power of denying it. 'If the ſentiments are mine!' (ſaid he, bluſhing at his own baſeneſs, as he ſpoke) 'I am obliged to you for placing them in ſo advantageous a light; and think I ought to decline ſharing in an honour, ſo much of which belongs to another.'—

Such a repulſe was no way diſcouraging. The paraſite repeated his aſſertion that the whole was genuinely his, both in words and ſentiments, as indeed he knew not any other, whoſe they could be; and inſiſting that he had no more merit in the affair, than barely that of writing them down, a liberty for which he begged pardon, appealed to his former conduct to acquit him of ſo mean a piece of flattery, as giving to another the honour of a work which had not its equal.

It is not difficult to perſuade a willing mind. The patron could no longer deny what was ſo clearly proved; and what his own conſcience bore teſtimony to, againſt his falſe modeſty. All that remained was to act in ſuch a manner, that his practice ſhould not contradict

dict this declaration of his principles; and ſo raiſe a doubt of their authenticity.

But after having made the firſt ſtep, he found no difficulty in this. He directly changed the whole tenour of his life. He laughed at morality, ridiculed Religion; and profeſſed vices he was unable to practice: And laſtly, to complete his character, procured admiſſion into this ſociety, which, as I ſaid, was the proof of every polite accompliſhment and qualification; where he nods, as you ſee, over the grave, as inſenſible to the mirth and pleaſures enjoyed by his companions, as of the deſpicableneſs and danger of his own ſituation.

As for this paraſite, his end was gained. From that moment he commanded him as he pleaſed, ſharing in the enjoyment of his fortune while he lived; and ſure of ſuch a portion of it, if he ſurvived him, as ſhould ſufficiently ſupply his appetites, the only uſe for which he deſired a fortune.

END OF THE THIRD VOLUME.

BRITISH MUSEUM
15
72
MAR